

PORTRAITS
OF
Illustrious Personages
OF
GREAT BRITAIN.

ENGRAVED FROM
AUTHENTIC PICTURES IN THE GALLERIES OF THE NOBILITY
AND THE PUBLIC COLLECTIONS OF THE COUNTRY

WITH
BIOGRAPHICAL AND HISTORICAL MEMOIRS
OF THEIR LIVES AND ACTIONS,

BY
EDMUND LODGE, ESQ. F. S. A.

VOL. I.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR HARDING AND LEPARD.

1835

P R E F A C E

(PUBLISHED WITH THE FIRST EDITION IN FOLIO.)

I^N imparting to the public five years since, the design of this great work and the character with which it was proposed to invest it, the author took the liberty to offer some remarks of a general nature, the substance of which it may perhaps be necessary, at all events cannot be improper, to recapitulate in this place.

“It is needless,” he observed, “to descant largely on the extended information and delight which we derive from the multiplication of portraits by engraving, or on the more important advantages resulting from the study of biography. Separately considered, the one affords an amusement not less innocent than elegant ; inculcates the rudiments, or aids the progress, of taste ; and rescues from the hand of time the perishable monuments raised by the pencil. The other, while it is perhaps the most agreeable branch of historical literature, is certainly the most useful in its moral effects ; stating the known circumstances, and endeavouring to unfold the secret motives. of human conduct ; selecting all that is worthy of being recorded ; bestowing its lasting encomiums and chastisements ; it at once informs and invigorates the

PREFACE.

mind, and warms and mends the heart. It is however," added he, "from the combination of portraits and biography that we reap the utmost degree of utility and pleasure which can be derived from them: as in contemplating the portrait of an eminent person we long to be instructed in his history, so in considering his actions we are anxious to behold his countenance. So earnest is this desire, that the imagination is generally ready to coin a set of features, or to conceive a character, to supply the painful absence of the one or the other. All sensible minds have experienced these illusions, and from a morbid excess of this interesting feeling have arisen the errors and extravagancies of the theory of physiognomy." It was not then with the mere view of perpetuating the histories or the resemblances of the illustrious dead; of exhibiting the skill of the painter, or the fidelity of the engraver, that this work was undertaken, but in the hope, by a combined effort, to make the strongest possible impression on the judgement and the memory, as well as on the imagination; and to give to biography and portraits, by uniting them, what may very properly be called then natural, and best moral direction.

Publications of similar character have already appeared in this country, and are held in high estimation. Among these the most important are the superb collections of Houbraken and Burch, and of the imitations of Holbein's heads from the exquisite original drawings in his Majesty's library. Each of these has its faults. Houbraken, as the late Lord Orford justly observes in his Catalogue of Engravers, "lived in Holland, was ignorant of our history, uninquisitive into the

PREFACE.

authenticity of the drawings which were transmitted to him, and engraved whatever was sent ;” and adduces two instances, Car, Earl of Somerset, and Secretary Thurlow, as not only spurious, but as being destitute of any the least resemblance to the persons they pretend to represent. An anonymous, but evidently well informed, writer asserts, in the Gentleman’s Magazine for 1788, that “Thurlow’s, and about thirty of the others, are copied from heads painted for no one knows whom.” While Houbraken thus sacrificed the truth of his subjects to the delicacies of his art, Birch, on the contrary, performed his part of the task with a laudable fidelity in his recitals of facts, but with an almost total inattention to delineation of character, or grace of language, as though he feared that the simplicity of truth might be disguised by a decent garb, and that biography might be in danger of degenerating into romance were it occasionally to endeavour to trace remarkable instances in the conduct of mankind to their proper intellectual sources. The defects of the other fine work were in a great measure unavoidable. Confined to the period of a single reign, it was too circumscribed to embrace the objects of the present design, and was intended rather to exhibit choice specimens of a particular master than portraits of distinguished characters. It presents therefore a motley mixture of eminence and obscurity ; of the resemblances of princes, heroes, and statesmen, who never could have been forgotten, with those of inoffensive country gentlemen and their wives, of whose very existence we should have remained ignorant but for the immortalizing pencil of Holbein.

How far these various faults may have been avoided in the

PREFACE.

present publication is a question which it would be presumptuous to affect to answer in this place. The authenticity of the memoirs here presented will stand or fall by the application of tests which are within the reach of every reader ; the truth of the correspondent portraits may be tried by an examination of the originals, which are in every instance referred to ; and the degree of skill displayed in the engravings will speak for itself. It will be obvious to the experienced eye, that the talents of the engraver have been exerted upon pictures of very varied degrees of excellence ; for whilst this work has extended our knowledge of some of the finest portraits of Rubens and Vandyke, others have claimed preservation as being the only memorials which are left to us of the persons represented. These are even more valuable, considered historically, for without them we should be deprived of the resemblances of some of the most illustrious characters in history who lived either in the infancy of the arts, or at periods when they were depressed by the more bustling interest of political strife or warlike contention.

It may be pardonable to assert on the behalf of the proprietors that they have attempted to their utmost to possess their country of a work as perfect as human fallibility could permit ; beautiful and correct in its two essential characters, and magnificent in all its subordinate features. They have spared no pains ; they have denied no expence ; in their anxious endeavours to render it an acceptable tribute to living taste and judgement, and a monument worthy of dedication to the exalted memory of those whom it professes to celebrate. Then diffidence of its merits has certainly been

PREFACE.

in some degree lessened by a fact which, while gratitude impels them to declare, pride could scarcely have allowed them to conceal the patronage and success which the work has experienced have been nearly unexampled.

The author of the memoirs too may perhaps be allowed to use a few words on his part of the task. He claims no degree of merit beyond that which may justly belong to patient circumspection, laborious research, and impartial relation; and he has no other motive for asserting that those advantages really have been bestowed on them than a wish to procure for them the favour of mere perusal. Without this caution, it is more than probable that they might sink unobserved under the weight of a general and most excuseable prejudice; for when he recollects the vague and flowery essays which almost invariably wait on engravings in ceremonious portions of what on such occasions is most properly called "letter-press," being in fact nothing else, he feels it necessary thus to bespeak for the fruits of his labour, humble as they may be, at least a fair trial. He has employed the best powers of his mind to give to these tracts as much of the true character of biography as the space allotted to them could allow. He has silently passed over minor and insignificant facts, and sought diligently for original and novel intelligence. He has lost no opportunities of correcting misrepresentation; of placing neglected or misconceived objects in their just lights; or of endeavouring to describe characters with strict impartiality and truth. It has been indeed his chief anxiety to distinguish himself from those "gentle historians" whose strains of unvaried panegyric were once honoured beyond

PREFACE.

their deserts by a sarcasm from the pen of the incomparable Burke. His judgement, however frequently it may be found erroneous, and his expression of it have been wholly unbiassed by any private motives. He has described men and things as he thought they deserved, and his friends have told him that he has sometimes spoken too plainly, but they have not been able to convince him that he has done wrong.

Quitting however these selfish topics, let us hasten to conclude this short address with a sincere declaration of those better feelings which perhaps alone rendered any sort of preface essentially necessary to the following sheets. Be it permitted to us most gratefully to acknowledge the condescension with which our solicitations for the powerful aid of those not less distinguished by their taste than by their exalted rank have been received, and the liberality with which the use of a vast treasure of inestimable pictures has been granted by the possessors of the most eminent collections in the land. Patronised and encouraged in every way by the noblemen and gentlemen who are respectively named on the several plates, from their bounty have arisen the means of producing a work which has laid us under such deep obligation to public favour. Justly ascribing it then to their splendid generosity, be it, with the most profound respect and gratitude, to them dedicated.

APPENDIX TO PREFACE.

THE design of this Collection of Portraits and Biography, more extensive than any which has been formed in this or in any other country, and so eminently illustrative of British History, has been fully laid down in the preceding Preface from the Author which accompanied the first Edition of the Work. Any address at the termination of it would have been unnecessary except so far as it afforded the Projector an opportunity to state that in conducting the Work to its completion, the same attention to excellence in the execution of its several important details has been invariably persevered in, as was pledged to be observed when the Prospectus was first issued for the intended publication, more than twenty years ago. Since that period the most extraordinary patronage that ever attended any literary effort to obtain public approval, has accompanied and cheered the Projector of the Work in the execution of his arduous but gratifying labour, and among the numerous acknowledgments with which he has been honoured expressive of satisfaction with his endeavour to merit the favour thus profusely extended to him, the following testimony from the pen of him who delighted his countrymen by the fertility of his talent, at the same time that he exalted the reputation of his country's literature by the splendour of his genius, is at once a subject of exultation

APPENDIX TO PREFACE.

and of regret, exultation at the approval of so accomplished an authority, and regret that the writer of it should so soon have ceased to be numbered among the living honours of his country. The decease of the illustrious author of the following letter prior to the completion of the Work which formed the subject of his eulogy, has afforded the humble individual to whom it is addressed the gratification, although a mournful one, of enriching this Collection of Portraits and Lives of British Worthies, with the Memorial of one of the most illustrious men of his age

“SIR,

“I am obliged by your Letter, requesting that I would express to you my sentiments respecting Mr. Lodge’s splendid Work, consisting of the Portraits of the most celebrated persons of English History, accompanied with Memoirs of their lives. I was at first disposed to decline offering any opinion on the subject; not because I had the slightest doubt in my own mind concerning the high value of the Work, but because in expressing sentiments I might be exposed to censure, as if attaching to my own judgment more importance than it could deserve. Mr. Lodge’s Work is however one of such vast consequence, that a person attached as I have been for many years to the study of History and Antiquities, may, I think, in a case of this rare and peculiar kind, be justly blamed for refusing his opinion, if required, concerning a publication of such value and importance.

“Mr Lodge’s talents as a Historian and Antiquary are well known to the public by his admirable collection of an-

APPENDIX TO PREFACE.

cient letters and documents, entitled *Illustrations of British History*, a book which I have very frequently consulted; and have almost always succeeded in finding not only the information required, but collected a great deal more as I went in search of it. The present Work presents the same talents and industry; the same patient powers of collecting information from the most obscure and hidden sources, and the same talent for selecting the facts which are the rarest and most interesting, and presenting them to the general reader in a luminous and concise manner.

“It is impossible for me to conceive a work which ought to be more interesting to the present age than that which exhibits before our eyes our ‘fathers as they lived,’ accompanied with such memorials of their lives and characters as enable us to compare their persons and countenances with their sentiments and actions.

“I pretend to offer no opinion upon the value of the Work in respect to art my opinion on that subject is literally worth nothing in addition to that of the numerous judges of paramount authority which have already admitted its high merits. But I may presume to say that this valuable and extended Series of the Portraits of the Illustrious Dead affords to every private gentleman, at a moderate expence, the interest attached to a large Gallery of British Portraits, on a plan more extensive than any collection which exists, and at the same time the essence of a curious library of historical, bibliographical, and antiquarian works. It is a work which, in regard to England, might deserve the noble motto rendered with such dignity by Dryden :

APPENDIX TO PREFACE.

‘ From hence the line of Alban fathers come,
‘ And the long glories of majestic Rome.’

“ I will enlarge no more on the topic, because I am certain that it requires not the voice of an obscure individual to point out to the British public the merits of a Collection which at once satisfies the imagination and the understanding, shewing us by the pencil how the most distinguished of our ancestors looked, moved and dressed; and informs us by the pen how they thought, acted, lived and died. I should in any other case have declined expressing an opinion in this public, and almost intrusive manner; but I feel that, when called upon to bear evidence in such a cause, it would be unmanly to decline appearing in Court, although expressing an opinion to which, however just, my name can add but little weight.

I am, Sir,
your obedient Servant,

WALTER SCOTT.”

TO MR HARDING, BOOKSELLER, LONDON

Abbotsford, 25th March, 1828

To the highly gifted and accomplished Author of the Memoirs by which the Portraits are so richly illustrated, thus eloquently eulogised by Sir Walter Scott, the conductor of the Work begs to offer his best acknowledgments, for directing the talents with which he is thus powerfully endowed, so forcibly to bear upon that part of the undertaking which was confided to his taste and execution “The short pieces of biography which accompany the Portraits from the pen of Mr Lodge, are,” as a contemporary

APPENDIX TO PREFACE.

writer happily designates them, “as characteristic as the Portraits themselves. Such an union of various talents, such a GALLERY OF ILLUSTRIOUS DEAD was never before presented to the Public.” Perhaps the strongest possible evidence of the high ground which this work originally assumed and which has been invariably maintained is to be found in the numerous Piracies of its Plan which have attended the course of its publication during a period of more than twenty years. The herd of anonymous and servile imitators who have followed at a respectful distance in the train of this Work, watching the development of its plan and copying its principal features, have given rise to numerous *Portrait Galleries* and other publications in avowed admission of its excellence and in imitation of its design. These imitators, by substituting cheapness of manufacture for sterling worth of execution, have endeavoured to thrust their spurious ware upon public notice, and have sought an ephemeral existence by fixing them upon the high reputation which has been awarded to this great work from the commencement to the close of its progress.

JOSEPH HARDING.

London, August 1, 1835

APPENDIX TO PREFACE

‘ From hence the line of Alban fathers come,
‘ And the long glories of majestic Rome.’

“ I will enlarge no more on the topic, because I am certain that it requires not the voice of an obscure individual to point out to the British public the merits of a Collection which at once satisfies the imagination and the understanding, shewing us by the pencil how the most distinguished of our ancestors looked, moved and dressed; and informs us by the pen how they thought, acted, lived and died. I should in any other case have declined expressing an opinion in this public, and almost intrusive manner; but I feel that, when called upon to bear evidence in such a cause, it would be unmanly to decline appearing in Court, although expressing an opinion to which, however just, my name can add but little weight.

I am, Sir,
your obedient Servant,

WALTER SCOTT.”

TO MR HARDING, BOOKSELLER, LONDON

Abbotsford, 25th March, 1828

To the highly gifted and accomplished Author of the Memoirs by which the Portraits are so richly illustrated, thus eloquently eulogised by Sir Walter Scott, the conductor of the Work begs to offer his best acknowledgments, for directing the talents with which he is thus powerfully endowed, so forcibly to bear upon that part of the undertaking which was confided to his taste and execution. “ The short pieces of biography which accompany the Portraits from the pen of Mr Lodge, are,” as a contemporary

APPENDIX TO PREFACE.

writer happily designates them, “as characteristic as the Portraits themselves. Such an union of various talents, such a GALLERY OF ILLUSTRIOUS DEAD was never before presented to the Public.” Perhaps the strongest possible evidence of the high ground which this work originally assumed and which has been invariably maintained is to be found in the numerous Piracies of its Plan which have attended the course of its publication during a period of more than twenty years. The herd of anonymous and servile imitators who have followed at a respectful distance in the train of this Work, watching the development of its plan and copying its principal features, have given rise to numerous *Portrait Galleries* and other publications in avowed admission of its excellence and in imitation of its design. These imitators, by substituting cheapness of manufacture for sterling worth of execution, have endeavoured to thrust their spurious ware upon public notice, and have sought an ephemeral existence by fixing them upon the high reputation which has been awarded to this great work from the commencement to the close of its progress.

JOSEPH HARDING.

London, August 1, 1835

DIRECTIONS TO THE BINDER.

The Preface, to follow the Title-Page of Volume I. pages 1 to 11

The pagination of the Preface, and the Appendix is at the bottom of the pages.

The Table of Contents of the whole work, divided into Volumes, with the Names of the Painters of the Portraits, and the Collections from whence they have been selected, is to follow the Appendix to Preface in Volume I pages 1 to 24. This Table has a fresh pagination, and is without signatures.

The Table of Contents of each subsequent Volume, is to follow its respective Title-page.

CHRONOLOGICAL ARRANGEMENT

OF THE WHOLE OF

THE PLATES,

DIVIDED INTO VOLUMES, AND CONSISTING OF

TWO HUNDRED AND FORTY PORTRAITS

VOLUME I.

1. ELIZABETH OF YORK, QUEEN OF HENRY THE SEVENTH 1502

*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Essex, at Cashobury*

- 2 THOMAS STANLEY, EARL OF DERBY, - HOLBEIN 1504

*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Derby, at Knowsley*

- 3 MARGARET OF LANCASTER, MOTHER OF KING HENRY
THE SEVENTH, - - - - 1509

*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Derby, at Knowsley*

- 4 CARDINAL WOLSEY, - - - HOLBEIN. 1530

From the Collection at Christ-Church, Oxford.

- 5 WILLIAM WARHAM, ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY
HOLBEIN 1532

*From the Collection of His Grace the Archbishop of Canter-
bury, at Lambeth Palace*

- 6 SIR JOHN MORE, - - - HOLBEIN 1533

*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Pembroke, at Wilton House.*

- 7 SIR THOMAS MORE, - - - HOLBEIN. 1535

*From the Collection of W. J. Lenthall, Esq. at Burford
Priory*

- 8 QUEEN ANNE BULLEN, - - HOLBEIN. 1536
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Warwick, at Warwick Castle*
- 9 QUEEN JANE SEYMOUR, - - HOLBEIN 1537
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford,
 at Woburn Abbey.*
- 10 SIR NICHOLAS CAREW, - - HOLBEIN 1539
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Beaufort,
 at Dalkeith Palace.*
- 11 THOMAS CROMWELL, EARL OF ESSEX, HOLBEIN. 1510
From the Collection of Sir Thomas Constable, Bart at Trill
- 12 MARGARET TUDOR, SISTER TO KING HENRY
 THE EIGHTH, - - - HOLBEIN 1511
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Lothian,
 at Newbattle Abbey.*
- 13 CHARLES BRANDON, DUKE OF SUFFOLK, - 1515
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
 Woburn Abbey*
14. CARDINAL BEATOUN, - - - - 1546
From the Original in Holyrood Palace, Edinburgh
- 15 HENRY HOWARD, EARL OF SURREY, - TITIAN 1517
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Norfolk,
 at Arundel Castle*
- 16 KING HENRY THE EIGHTH, - HOLBEIN 1547
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Egremont, at Petworth*
- 17 QUEEN CATHARINE PARR, - - HOLBEIN 1518
*From the Collection of Dawson Turner, Esq. A M F R A
 and L S.*
- 18 THOMAS, LORD SEYMOUR OF SUDELEY, HOLBEIN 1549
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Bath,
 at Longleat*

19. SIR ANTHONY DENNY, - - - HOLBEIN 1549
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Radnor, at Longford Castle*
- 20 EDWARD SEYMOUR, DUKE OF SOMERSET, HOLBEIN. 1552
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Bath,
 at Longleat.*

VOLUME II.

- 21 KING EDWARD THE SIXTH, - - - HOLBEIN 1553
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Egremont, at Petworth.*
22. JOHN DUDLEY, DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND,
 HOLBEIN 1553
From the Collection of Sir J. S. Sidney, Bart. at Penshurst
- 23 THOMAS HOWARD, DUKE OF NORFOLK, HOLBEIN. 1554
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Norfolk, at
 Norfolk House*
- 24 LADY JANE GREY, - - - - - 1554
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Stamford and Warrington, at Enville Hall*
- 25 HENRY GREY, DUKE OF SUFFOLK, MARK GERARD. 1554
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Salts-
 bury, at Hatfield*
26. JOHN RUSSELL, FIRST EARL OF BEDFORD, 1555
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
 Woburn Abbey*
27. NICHOLAS RIDLEY, BISHOP OF LONDON, - 1555
*From the Original in the Collection of the Reverend Henry
 Ridley, D. D.*
- 28 THOMAS CRANMER, ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY,
 FLICK 1556
From the Collection in the British Museum

- 29 EDWARD COURTENAY, EARL OF DEVONSHIRE,
 SIR ANTONIO MORE 1556
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
 Woburn Abbey*
- 30 CARDINAL POLE, - - - - - TITIAN 1557
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Lord Arundell,
 of Wardour, at Wardour Castle*
- 31 MARY, QUEEN OF ENGLAND, - HOLBEIN 1558
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of
 Exeter, at Burghley House*
- 32 WILLIAM, FIRST LORD PAGET, - HOLBEIN 1563
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of
 Anglesea, at Beaudesert*
- 33 EDWARD, FIRST LORD NORTH, - - - 1564
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Guilford, at Wroton Abbey*
- 34 HENRY STUART, LORD DARNLEY, KING OF SCOTLAND,
 1567
*From the Original in the Collection of the late Earl of
 Seaforth, at Braham Castle*
- 35 JAMES STUART, EARL OF MURRAY, REGENT
 OF SCOTLAND, - - - - - 1570
From the Collection at Holyrood Palace, Edinburgh
- 36 JOHN KNOX, - - - - - 1572
From the Original in Holyrood Palace, Edinburgh
- 37 THOMAS HOWARD, FOURTH DUKE OF NORFOLK, 1572
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Norfolk, at
 Arundel Castle*
38. WILLIAM POWLETT, MARQUIS OF WINCHESTER,
 HOLBEIN 1572
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Northumber-
 land, at Northumberland House*
- 39 SIR WILLIAM MAITLAND, OF LETHINGTON, - 1573
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Lauderdale, at Thulestaue Castle.*

40. JAMES HAMILTON, EARL OF ARRAN, DUKE OF
CHATELHERAULT, - - - KETEL 1574
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Hamilton, at
Hamilton Palace*

VOLUME III.

- 41 MATTHEW PARKER, ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY, 1575
*From the Collection of His Grace the Archbishop of Canter-
bury, at Lambeth Palace*
- 42 WALTER DEVEREUX, EARL OF ESSEX, - - 1576
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Lord Bagot,
at Blythfield*
- 43 SIR NICHOLAS BACON, - - - ZUCCHERO 1579
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
Woburn Abbey*
- 44 SIR THOMAS GRESHAM, - - - HOLBEIN 1579
From the Collection in Mercer's Hall, London
- 45 HENRY FITZALAN, EARL OF ARUNDEL, HOLBEIN 1580
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Bath,
at Longleat*
- 46 JAMES DOUGLAS, EARL OF MORTON, - - 1581
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Morton, at Dalmahoy*
- 47 THOMAS RADCLYFFE, EARL OF SUSSEX, SIR A. MORE 1583
From the Collection of William Radclyffe, Esq
- 48 EDWARD CLINTON, EARL OF LINCOLN, - KETEL. 1584
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
Woburn Abbey*
- 49 SIR PHILIP SIDNEY, - - - SIR A. MORE. 1586
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
Woburn Abbey*
- 50 MARY STUART, QUEEN OF SCOTLAND, - - 1587
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Morton, at Dalmahoy*

- 51 ROBERT DUDLEY, EARL OF LEICESTER, - - 1588
From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Salisbury, at Hatfield
52. AMBROSE DUDLEY, EARL OF WARWICK, - 1590
From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Salisbury, at Hatfield
- 53 SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM, - - - 1590
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Dorset, at Knole
- 54 SIR CHRISTOPHER HATTON, - - KITIL 1591
From the Collection of the Right Honourable Viscount Dillon, at Ditchley
- 55 CARDINAL ALLEN, - - - 1591
From the Collection of Broune Mostyn, Esq at Kiddington
- 56 SIR FRANCIS DRAKE, - - - 1595
From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Lothian, at Newbattle Abbey
- 57 PHILIP HOWARD, EARL OF ARUNDEL, ZUCCHERO 1595
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Norfolk, at Norfolk House
- 58 JOHN, FIRST LORD MAITLAND, OF THIRLESTANE, 1595
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Lauderdale, at Thirlestane Castle
- 59 WILLIAM CECIL, LORD BURGHLEY, M GIRARD 1598
From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Exeter, at Burghley House
- 60 ROBERT DEVEREUX, EARL OF ESSEX HILLIARD. 1601
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Verulam, at Gorhambury

VOLUME IV.

- 61 QUEEN ELIZABETH, - - ZUCCHERO 1603
From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Salisbury, at Hatfield

62. JOHN, FIRST MARQUIS OF HAMILTON, MARK GERARD 1604
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Hamilton, at Hamilton Palace.
63. GEORGE CLIFFORD, EARL OF CUMBERLAND, - 1605
From the Bodleian Gallery, Oxford
64. CHARLES BLOUNT, BARON MONTJOY AND EARL OF DEVONSHIRE, - - - PANTOXA 1606
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Hamilton, at Hamilton Palace
65. THOMAS SACKVILLE, EARL OF DORSET, - 1608
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Dorset, at Knole.
66. SIR THOMAS BODLEY, - - - JANSEN 1612
From the Bodleian Gallery, Oxford
67. ROBERT CECIL, EARL OF SALISBURY ZUCCHERO 1612
From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Salisbury, at Hatfield House
68. HENRY PRINCE OF WALES, - - MYTENS. 1612
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Dorset, at Knole
69. HENRY HOWARD, EARL OF NORTHAMPTON, ZUCCHERO 1614
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Carlisle, at Castle Howard
70. LADY ARABELLA STUART, - - VAN SOMER 1615
From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Bath, at Longleat
71. THOMAS EGERTON, VISCOUNT BRACKLEY, - 1617
From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Stafford, at Cleveland House
72. SIR WALTER RALEIGH, - - ZUCCHERO 1618
From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Bath, at Longleat

- 73 MARY SIDNEY, COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE, GIRARD 1621
*From the Collection of Sir John Shelley Sidney, Bart at
 Penshurst*
- 74 THOMAS CECIL, FIRST EARL OF EXETER, JANSEN. 1621
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Marquis of
 Exeter, at Burleigh House.*
- 75 HENRY WRIOTHESLEY, EARL OF SOUTHAMPTON,
 MIRAVIT 1621
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
 Woburn Abbey*
- 76 JAMES, SECOND MARQUIS OF HAMILTON, VAN SOMER 1621
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Hamilton, at
 Hamilton Palace*
- 77 CHARLES HOWARD OF EFFINGHAM, EARL OF
 NOTTINGHAM, - - - - 1621
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Verulam, at Gorhambury .*
- 78 LODOWICK STUART, DUKE OF RICHMOND.
 VAN SOMER 1621
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Egremont, at Petworth*
- 79 FRANCIS BACON, VISCOUNT ST ALBAN, VAN SOMER 1626
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Verulam at Gorhambury*
- 80 THOMAS HOWARD, EARL OF SUFFOLK ZUCCHERO 1626
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Carlisle at Castle Howard*

VOLUME V.

- 81 EDWARD SOMERSET, EARL OF WORCESTER,
 ZUCCHERO. 1627
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Verulam, at Gorhambury*

82. LUCY HARINGTON, COUNTESS OF BEDFORD,
HONTHORST. *Widowed*, 1627
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
Woburn Abbey.*
83. GEORGE VILLIERS, DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM,
JANSEN. 1628
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Clarendon, at Grove Park.*
84. FULKE GREVILLE, LORD BROOKE, - - 1628
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Willoughby
de Broke, at Compton-Verney*
85. GEORGE CAREW, EARL OF TOTNES, - ZUCCHERO. 1629
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Verulam, at Gorhambury*
86. WILLIAM HERBERT, EARL OF PEMBROKE,
VANDYKE 1630
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Pembroke, at Wilton House.*
87. SIR HUGH MIDDLETON - - - 1631
From the Original in Goldsmith's Hall, London
88. HENRY PERCY, EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND,
VANDYKE 1632
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Egremont, at Petworth*
89. GEORGE ABBOT, ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY, 1633
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Verulam, at Gorhambury*
90. RICHARD WESTON, EARL OF PORTLAND, VANDYKE 1634
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Verulam, at Gorhambury*
91. WALTER, FIRST LORD ASTON, - - - 1639
From the Collection of Thomas Blount, Esq. at Bellamour.

- 92 FRANCES HOWARD, DUCHESS OF RICHMOND,
VANDYKE 1639
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of
Bath at Longleat*
- 93 SIR HENRY WOTTON, - - JANSSEN 1639
From the Bodleian Gallery, Oxford
- 94 THOMAS, LORD KEEPER COVENTRY, JANSSEN. 1610
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Clarendon, at the Grove.*
- 95 FRANCIS RUSSELL, EARL OF BEDFORD, VANDYKE 1611
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
Woburn Abbey*
- 96 THOMAS WENTWORTH, EARL STRAFFORD,
VANDYKE 1611
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Egremont, at Petworth*
- 97 ROBERT BERTIE, EARL OF LINDSEY, VANDYKE 1612
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Baroness
Willoughby of Eresby, at Grimsthorpe Castle.*
- 98 ROBERT GREVILLE, LORD BROOKE, - 1613
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Warwick, at Warwick Castle*
99. SPENCER COMPTON, EARL OF NORTHAMPTON, 1613
*From the Original in the Collection of the Most Noble the
Marquis of Northampton, at Castle Ashby.*
100. ROBERT DORMER, EARL OF CAERNARVON,
VANDYKE 1613
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Pembroke at Wilton.*

VOLUME VI.

101. WILLIAM VILLIERS, VISCOUNT GRANDISON,
VANDYKE 1643
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Clarendon, at the Grove.*

102. WILLIAM FIELDING, EARL OF DENBIGH, VANDYKE, 1643
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Hamilton,
 at Hamilton Palace.*
- 103 HENRY SPENCER, EARL OF SUNDERLAND, WALKER. 1643
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl
 Spencer, at Althorp*
- 104 LUCIUS CAREY, VISCOUNT FALKLAND, VANDYKE. 1643
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Lord Arundell,
 at Wadour Castle*
105. HENRY DANVERS, EARL OF DANBY, - - 1643
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford,
 Woburn Abbey*
- 106 WILLIAM LAUD, ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY,
 VANDYKE. 1645
*From the Collection of His Grace the Archbishop of Canter-
 bury, at Lambeth Palace*
107. LIONEL CRANFIELD, EARL OF MIDDLESEX,
 MYTENS. 1645
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Dorset, at
 Knole*
108. HENRY SOMERSET, FIRST MARQUIS OF WORCESTER,
 JANSSEN. 1646
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Beaufort, at
 Badminton*
109. THOMAS HOWARD, EARL OF ARUNDEL AND SURREY.
 RUBENS 1646
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Warwick, at Warwick Castle.*
- 110 ROBERT DEVEREUX, EARL OF ESSEX, WALKER. 1646
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Stafford,
 at Trentham*
- 111. ARTHUR LORD CAPEL, - - - JANSSEN. 1648
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Essex, at Cashobury*

- 112 KING CHARLES THE FIRST, - VANDYKE 1648
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Pembroke, at Wilton*
- 113 EDWARD LORD HERBERT OF CHIERBURY, - 1648
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Viscount Chie,
at Powis Castle*
114. JAMES, FIRST DUKE OF HAMILTON, VANDYKE. 1649
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Hamilton, at
Hamilton Palace*
- 115 BLANCH SOMERSET, BARONESS ARUNDELL OF
WARDOUR, - - - - - 1649
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Lord Arundell,
at Wardour Castle.*
- 116 HENRY RICH, EARL OF HOLLAND, VANDYKE 1649
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Buccleuch, at
Montagu House*
- 117 GEORGE GORDON, MARQUIS OF HUNTLEY,
VANDYKE. 1649
*From the Collection of Her Grace the Dowager Duchess of
Buccleuch, at Montagu House*
- 118 GEORGE LORD GORING - VANDYKE circa 1650
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Egremont, at Petworth*
- 119 JAMES GRAHAM, MARQUIS OF MONTROSE, VANDYKE. 1650
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Montrose, at
Buchanan House*
- 120 PHILIP HERBERT, EARL OF PEMBROKE AND
MONTGOMERY, - - - VANDYKE 1650
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Pembroke, at Wilton*

VOLUME VII.

- 121 WILLIAM, SECOND DUKE OF HAMILTON, MITENS. 1651
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Hamilton, at
Hamilton Palace,*

122. JAMES STANLEY, EARL OF DERBY, VANDYKE 1651
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Derby, at Knowsley.
123. FRANCIS LORD COTTINGTON, - VAN SOMER. 1652
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Clarendon, at the Grove.
124. RALPH LORD HOPTON, - - - VANDYKE 1652
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Egremont, at Petworth
- 125 EDWARD SACKVILLE, FOURTH EARL OF DORSET, VANDYKE. 1652
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Dorset, at Knole
- 126 JOHN SELDEN, - - - MYTENS 1654
From the Bodleian Collection, Oxford.
- 127 JAMES STUART, DUKE OF RICHMOND, VANDYKE. 1655
From the Collection of Sir John Shelley Sidney, Bart. at Penshurst.
- 128 ROBERT RICH, EARL OF WARWICK, VANDYKE 1658
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Hardwicke, at Wimpole.
- 129 OLIVER CROMWELL, - - - WALKER 1658
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl Spencer, at Althorp
130. DOROTHY PERCY, COUNTESS OF LEICESTER, VANDYKE 1659
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Egremont, at Petworth
131. WILLIAM SEYMOUR, MARQUIS OF HERTFORD, VANDYKE 1660
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Clarendon, at the Grove.
132. LUCY PERCY, COUNTESS OF CARLISLE, VANDYKE. 1660
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Egremont, at Petworth

133. ARCHIBALD CAMPBELL, MARQUIS OF ARGYLL, 1661
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Argyll, at
 Inverary Castle*
134. ELIZABETH, QUEEN OF BOHEMIA, DAUGHTER
 OF KING JAMES THE FIRST, - HONTHORST. 1662
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Craven, at Combe Abbey.*
- 135 CHARLOTTE DE LA TREMOUILLE, COUNTESS
 OF DERBY, - - - - - VANDYKE 1663
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Derby, at Knowsley*
- 136 SIR KENELM DIGBY, - - - - - VANDYKE 1665
From the Original in the Bodleian Gallery, Oxford
- 137 MONTAGUE BERTIE, EARL OF LINDSEY, VANDYKE 1666
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Baroness
 Willoughby of Eresby, at Grimsthorpe Castle*
- 138 EDWARD SOMERSET, SECOND MARQUIS OF
 WORCESTER, - - - - - VANDYKE 1667
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Beaufort, at
 Badminton.*
- 139 THOMAS WRIOTHESLEY, EARL OF SOUTHAMPTON,
 - - - - - LELY. 1667
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
 Woburn Abbey*
- 140 ALGERNON PERCY, EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND
 - - - - - VANDYKE. 1668
*From the Collection of The Right Honourable the Earl of
 Essex, at Cashobury*

VOLUME VIII.

141. HENRIETTA MARIA, QUEEN OF CHARLES THE FIRST,
 - - - - - VANDYKE 1669
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Clarendon, at the Grove.*

142. GEORGE MONK, DUKE OF ALBEMARLE, LELY. 1670-1
From the Town-Hall, Exeter
143. EDWARD MONTAGU, EARL OF MANCHESTER,
LELY 1671
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
Woburn Abbey.*
144. ANNE HYDE, DUCHESS OF YORK, - LELY. 1671
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Clarendon, at the Grove.*
- 145 EDWARD MONTAGU, EARL OF SANDWICH, LELY 1672
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Countess of
Sandwich, at Hinchinbroke*
- 146 THOMAS LORD CLIFFORD, OF CHUDLEIGH, LELY 1673
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Lord Clifford,
at Ugbrooke*
- 147 EDWARD HYDE, EARL OF CLARENDON, LELY 1674
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Clarendon, at the Grove*
- 148 JOHN POWLETT, MARQUIS OF WINCHESTER,
P. OLIVER. 1674
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of
Winchester, at Amport House*
- 149 ANNE CLIFFORD, COUNTESS OF DORSET, PEM-
BROKE, AND MONTGOMERY, - - MYTENS. 1675
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Dorset, at
Knole*
150. WILLIAM KERR, EARL OF LOTHIAN, JAMIESON 1675
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of
Lothian, at Newbattle Abbey*
151. WILLIAM CAVENDISH, DUKE OF NEWCASTLE,
VANDYKE. 1676
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl
Spencer, at Althorp*

- 152 SIR MATTHEW HALE, - - - 1676
*From the Original in the Library of the Honourable Society
of Lincoln's Inn*
- 153 GEORGE DIGBY, EARL OF BRISTOL, - VANDYKE. 1677
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl
Spencer, at Althorp.*
- 154 WILLIAM HOWARD, VISCOUNT STAFFORD, VANDYKE 1680
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Bute,
at Latou*
- 155 JOHN LESLIE, DUKE OF ROTHES, - - LELY 1681
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Rothes, at Leshe House*
- 156 PRINCE RUPERT, - - - VANDYKE 1682
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Craven, at Combe Abbey*
157. JOHN MAITLAND, DUKE OF LAUDERDALE, LELY 1682
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Lauderdale, at Thulestane Castle.*
- 158 HENEAGE FINCH, EARL OF NOTTINGHAM, LELY 1682
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Verulam, at Goshambury*
- 159 DAVID LESLIE, FIRST LORD NEWARK. - LELY 1682
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Hamilton, at
Hamilton Palace*
- 160 DOROTHY SIDNEY, COUNTESS OF SUNDERLAND, VANDYKE 1683-4
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Egremont, at Petworth*

VOLUME IX.

- 161 WILLIAM LORD RUSSELL, - - - LELY 1683
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Upper Ossory.*

- 162 ALGERNON SIDNEY, - - - 1683
From the Collection of Sir John Shelley Sidney, Bart. at Penshurst.
163. ANNE CARRE, COUNTESS OF BEDFORD, VANDYKE. 1684
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Egremont, at Petworth.
164. KING CHARLES THE SECOND, - - LELY. 1685
From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Hertford, at Ragley
- 165 JAMES SCOT, DUKE OF MONMOUTH, - RILEY. 1685
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Buccleuch, at Dalkeith
- 166 HENRY BENNET, EARL OF ARLINGTON, LELY. 1685
From the Collection of the Right Honourable Lord de Clifford, at King's Weston
167. FRANCIS NORTH, LORD GUILDFORD, - RILEY. 1685
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Guildford at Wroxton Abbey,
168. ARCHIBALD CAMPBELL, EARL OF ARGYLL, 1685
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Argyll, at Inverary Castle
169. JAMES BUTLER, DUKE OF ORMOND, KNELLER. 1688
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Strathmore, at Glamis Castle
170. JOHN GRAHAM, VISCOUNT OF DUNDEE, LELY 1689
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Strathmore, at Glamis Castle
171. ELIZABETH CECIL, COUNTESS OF DEVONSHIRE,
VANDYKE 1689
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Egremont, at Petworth.
172. THE HONOURABLE ROBERT BOYLE, - 1691
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Liverpool at Combe Wood.

- 173 JOHN TILLOTSON, ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY,
KNELLER 1694
From the Collection of His Grace the Archbishop of Canterbury, at Lambeth Palace
- 174 WILLIAM, FIRST EARL OF CRAVEN, HONTHORST. 1697
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of Craven, at Combe Abbey
- 175 WILLIAM RUSSELL, DUKE OF BEDFORD, VANDYKE. 1700
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl Spencer, at Althorp
- 176 ROBERT SPENCER, EARL OF SUNDERLAND,
MARATTA 1702
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl Spencer, at Althorp
- 177 FRANCES THERESA STEWART DUCHESS OF
RICHMOND, - - - - - LELY 1702
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Richmond, at Goodwood
- 178 ARCHIBALD CAMPBELL, FIRST DUKE OF ARGYLL,
LELY 1703
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Argyll, at Inverary Castle
- 179 JOHN LOCKE, - - - - - KNELLER 1704
From the Collection at Christ Church, Oxford
180. CATHERINE OF BRAGANZA, QUEEN OF CHARLES
THE SECOND, - - - - - LELY 1705
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Gordon, at Gordon Castle.

VOLUME X.

- 181 WILLIAM CAVENDISH, FIRST DUKE OF DEVONSHIRE
RILEY 1707
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Devonshire, at Chatsworth

- 182 SIDNEY GODOLPHIN, EARL OF GODOLPHIN,
KNELLER 1710
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Marlborough,
 at Blenheim*
183. THOMAS OSBORNE, FIRST DUKE OF LEEDS,
V VAART. 1712
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Leeds, at
 Hornby Castle*
- 184 QUEEN ANNE, - - - KNELLER 1714
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Egremont, at Petworth*
- 185 GILBERT BURNET, BISHOP OF SALISBURY,
KNELLER. 1714-15
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Hardwicke, at Wimpole*
- 186 JOHN, FIRST LORD SOMERS, - - - KNELLER 1716
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Hardwicke, at Wimpole*
187. CHARLES TALBOT, DUKE OF SHREWSBURY,
KNELLER 1718
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Shrewsbury, at Heythrop*
- 188 JOHN CHURCHILL, DUKE OF MARLBOROUGH,
KNELLER 1722
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Marlborough,
 at Blenheim*
- 189 RACHAEL WRIOTHESLEY, LADY RUSSELL, -
COOPER 1723
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
 Woburn Abbey.*
- 190 ROBERT HARLEY, EARL OF OXFORD, KNELLER 1724
From the Collection in the British Museum
- 191 SIR ISAAC NEWTON, - - - KNELLER 1727
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Egremont, at Petworth*

- 192 FRANCIS ATTERBURY, BISHOP OF ROCHESTER,
From the Bodleian Gallery, Oxford. KNELLER 1732
- 193 CHARLES MORDAUNT, THIRD EARL OF PETER-
 BROUGH, - - - - - DART 1735
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Liverpool, at Combe Wood*
- 194 JOHN CAMPBELL, SECOND DUKE OF ARGYLL, AND
 DUKE OF GREENWICH, - - - KNELLER 1743
From the Collection of the Honourable George Agar Ellis
- 195 SARAH JENNINGS, DUCHESS OF MARLBOROUGH,
 LINT 1744
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Marlborough,
 at Blenheim*
- 196 JAMES BUTLER, SECOND DUKE OF ORMOND,
 KNELLER 1745
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Devonshire,
 at Chatsworth*
- 197 ROBERT WALPOLE, FIRST EARL OF ORFORD, JIRVANS 1746
From the Collection of Thomas Walpole, Esq
- 198 CHARLES SEYMOUR, SIXTH DUKE OF SOMERSET,
 KNELLER 1748
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Egremont, at Petworth*
- 199 JOHN MONTAGU, SECOND DUKE OF MONTAGU,
 KNELLER 1749
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Egremont, at Petworth*

VOLUME XI

- 200 HENRY ST JOHN, FIRST VISCOUNT BOLINGBROKE,
 KNELLER 1751
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Egremont, at Petworth*

- 201 RICHARD BOYLE, EARL OF BURLINGTON, KNAPTON 1753
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Devonshire,
 at Chatsworth.*
- 202 HORATIO, FIRST LORD WALPOLE, - VAN LOO 1757
From the Collection of Thomas Walpole, Esq at Stagbury.
- 203 WILLIAM PULTENEY, EARL OF BATH, - JERVAS 1764
From the Collection of the Right Honourable Lord Northwick.
- 204 PHILIP YORKE, FIRST EARL OF HARDWICKE,
 RAMSAY 1764
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Hardwicke, at Wimpole*
- 205 THOMAS HOLLES PELHAM, DUKE OF NEWCASTLE,
 HOARE 1768
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Newcastle, at
 Clumber*
- 206 JOHN MANNERS, MARQUIS OF GRANBY, REYNOLDS 1770
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Egremont, at Petworth*
- 207 JOHN RUSSELL, DUKE OF BEDFORD, REYNOLDS 1771
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
 Woburn Abbey.*
- 208 HENRY FOX, FIRST LORD HOLLAND, REYNOLDS 1774
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Lord Holland, at
 Holland House*
- 209 ROBERT LORD CLIVE, - - - 1774
From the Original in the Government House, Calcutta
- 210 WILLIAM PITT, FIRST EARL OF CHATHAM, HOARE 1778
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Lord Bridport,
 at Cricket St Thomas*
- 211 ADMIRAL LORD HAWKE, - - - COTES. 1781
From the Naval Gallery, at Greenwich Hospital

- 212 CHARLES WATSON WENTWORTH, SECOND MARQUIS
OF ROCKINGHAM, - - - RYANOLDS 1782
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl Fitz-
william, at Wentworth House
- 213 ADMIRAL VISCOUNT KEPPEL, - - - RYANOLDS 1786
From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
Woburn Abbey
- 214 GEORGE AUGUSTUS ELLIOTT, LORD HEATHFIELD,
From the National Gallery RYANOLDS 1790
- 215 ADMIRAL LORD RODNEY, - - - RYANOLDS 1792
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Egremont, at Petworth
- 216 FREDERICK NORTH, LORD GUILDFORD, - - - DANCE 1792
From the Collection of the Honourable Georgiana North, at
Wroton Abbey
- 217 JOHN STUART, EARL OF BUTE, - - - RAMSAY 1792
From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Bute,
at Luton
- 218 LORD CHIEF JUSTICE MANSFIELD, - - - RYANOLDS 1793
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Mansfield, at Kenwood
- 219 LORD CHANCELLOR CAMDEN, - - - DANCE 1794
From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of
Camden
- 220 SIR WILLIAM JONES, - - - RYANOLDS 1794
From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl Spencer,
at Althorp

VOLUME XII

- 221 HORACE WALPOLE, EARL OF ORFORD, ROSALBA 1797
From the Collection of Thomas Walpole, Esq at Stagbury.

- 222 JEFFERY, FIRST LORD AMHERST, - REYNOLDS 1797
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Earl Amherst,
at Montreal*
- 223 ADMIRAL EARL HOWE, GAINSBOROUGH 1799
From the Collection in the Trinity House, London.
- 224 SIR RALPH ABERCROMBY, - HOPPNER 1801
From the Collection of the Honourable James Abercromby
- 225 FRANCIS RUSSELL, DUKE OF BEDFORD, HOPPNER 1802
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
Woburn Abbey*
- 226 ADMIRAL VISCOUNT DUNCAN, - HOPPNER 1804
From the Guildhall, London
- 227 ADMIRAL VISCOUNT NELSON, HOPPNER 1805
From His Majesty's Collection
- 228 CHARLES, FIRST MARQUIS CORNWALLIS, COPLEY 1805
From the Guildhall, London
- 229 WILLIAM, FIRST MARQUIS OF LANSDOWNE, REYNOLDS 1805
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Lans-
downe at Bowood*
- 230 WILLIAM PITT, - - - HOPPNER 1806
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Lord Car-
rington*
- 231 CHARLES JAMES FOX, - - - OPIE 1806
From the Collection of T W Coke, Esq at Holkham
- 232 ADMIRAL VISCOUNT BRIDPORT, - ABBOT 1814
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the late Vis-
countess Bridport, at Cricket St Thomas*
- 233 ADMIRAL VISCOUNT HOOD, - REYNOLDS 1816
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the late Vis-
countess Bridport, at Cricket St Thomas*
- 234 HER ROYAL HIGHNESS THE PRINCESS
CHARLOTTE OF WALES, A E CHALON, R A 1817
From the Collection of A E Chalons, Esq R A

- 235 SIR JOSEPH BANKS, BART K.B P R S LAWRENCE 1820
From the British Museum
- 236 ADMIRAL THE EARL OF ST VINCENT, HOPNER 1823
From His Majesty's Collection.
- 237 ROBERT BANKS JENKINSON, EARL OF LIVERPOOL,
LAWRENCE 1829
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
 Liverpool, at Coombe Wood.*
- 238 SIR WALTER SCOTT, BART - - KNIGHT 1832
In the possession of Mr. Joseph Harding
239. ADMIRAL VISCOUNT EXMOUTH, - LAWRENCE 1833
From the Collection of Edward Harke Locker, Esq
- 240 ARTHUR WELLESLEY, DUKE OF WELLINGTON
In the possession of Mr. Joseph Harding LAWRENCE
 (The Figure from a Picture by Evans)



Engr. D.V. 1

ELIZABETH OF YORK

QUEEN TO HENRY THE SEVENTH

OH 1502

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLECTION OF

HIS EXCELLENCY THE EARL OF LIVERPOOL

QUEEN ELIZABETH, OF YORK,

WIFE TO KING HENRY THE SEVENTH.

ELIZABETH Plantagenet, the passive instrument of terminating the mighty contest between the houses of York and Lancaster, was the eldest of the five daughters of King Edward the fourth, by his Queen, Elizabeth Widevile. She was born in the palace of Westminster, on the eleventh of February, 1466, the year after her father's marriage. It has been said that Edward's first intention was to bestow her on George Nevile, Duke of Bedford, and it is not improbable, surrounded as he was by dangers in the commencement of his reign, that he might then have meditated so to purchase the attachment of one of the most powerful of his subjects. Security, however, naturally dictated higher views, and she was engaged, by the treaty of Amiens, in 1475, to the Dauphin, afterward Charles the eighth; and the Duchy of Guienne, or an equivalent in treasure, assigned as her dower. For the eight succeeding years the match was considered as certain: she was constantly styled in her father's court, and in that of France, "Madame la Dauphine:" in 1478 Edward sent Sir Richard Tonstall, and Langton, a civilian, to perform in Paris the ceremony of solemnly betrothing, and a new treaty, in terms more strict and wary than the former, was soon after signed. Louis the eleventh, however, the most faithless as well as the most acute politician of his time, having cultivated as long as was necessary to his great objects the amity of England by these repeated assurances, in 1483 suddenly threw off the mask, and married his son to the heiress of Burgundy; and Edward, in the midst of mighty warlike preparations to avenge himself of the affront, was taken off by death.

QUEEN ELIZABETH, OF YORK.

The widowed Queen, and her offspring, became now the most wretched family of the realm Elizabeth, who had reached the age of sixteen, fled with her mother from the persecution of her uncle, the Duke of Gloucester, afterwards Richard the third, to sanctuary at Westminster, and remained in that miserable security while the tyrant imbrued his hands in the blood of her brothers, and of her maternal relations, and seized the crown. In the meantime, Henry Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, whose power and policy had mainly contributed to raise him to it, became suddenly, from causes which have been differently represented by historians, his bitter enemy, and conspired with Morton, Bishop of Ely, and afterwards Primate, to place Henry Earl of Richmond on the throne In order to fortify his title and personal interest, as well as to unite the two great parties from whose contention such miseries had already ensued, they agreed, in the first place, to propose to Margaret Countess of Richmond, his mother, and to the Queen Dowager, that he should marry the Princess Elizabeth The negotiation was full of difficulty and danger Sir Reginald Bray, a friend of Morton's, and a servant to the Countess, was commissioned to open it to his mistress, who joyfully engaged in it, and dispatched Lewis, her physician, to lay it before the Queen, then in her voluntary imprisonment. The Queen returned for answer, says Hollinshed, " that all King Edward's friends and dependants should join with her for the Earl of Richmond, on condition that he took his corporal oath to marry the Lady Elizabeth, her eldest daughter, or, in case she were not living, the Lady Cecilia, her youngest daughter;" and sent her chaplain, Christopher Uiswick, to make the overture in her name to Richmond, then in Bretagne, to whom Morton had already presented himself, on the part of Buckingham; meanwhile Bray, and a few other confidential men, were busily employed at home in forming a party of persons of rank and influence, taking from each an oath of fidelity and secrecy. Richmond readily agreed to every part of the plan, disclosed it to the Duke of

QUEEN ELIZABETH, OF YORK.

Bretagne, from whom he received a promise of money and troops to support his landing in England ; and, on Christmas day, 1483, swore solemnly, in the cathedral of Rennes, to abide by the terms proposed by the Queen Dowager.

A design of such extent and magnitude could not long have escaped the penetration of Richard. He peremptorily summoned Buckingham to his presence, who, conscious that he had now no choice between death on the scaffold and the chance of war, suddenly appeared in arms, was abandoned by his men ; betrayed by an old servant ; and beheaded at Salisbury. The Earl of Richmond was attainted, and, narrowly escaping from the treachery of the favourite minister of the Duke of Bretagne, who had been bribed by Richard to deliver him up, fled to the court of France, and was received with coolness. Richard, flushed with these successes, and knowing that the hopes of the adverse party were founded chiefly on the marriage, conceived the extravagant design of offering his own hand, though he had already a wife, to his niece the Princess Elizabeth. The Queen Dowager, whose unpardonable conduct at that period is spoken of more at large in another part of this work, was prevailed on by that marvellous address of which he was so eminent a master, to quit her sanctuary ; to put that Princess, and her four sisters, into his hands, and to use all her endeavours to attach to his interest those whom she had so lately persuaded to espouse the cause of Henry. While these strange circumstances were passing Richard's Queen died, at a moment so convenient to his plan as to render it ridiculous to speak of suspicion of foul play, and he now made his addresses publicly to Elizabeth, who rejected them with the abhorrence which might naturally be expected. Buck, a good antiquary, but a wretched historian, who, for the sake of contradicting Sir Thomas More, wrote that rhapsodical life of Richard the third on which Lord Orford founded his " Historic Doubts," quotes, it is true, a letter from that Princess to the Duke of Norfolk, which he tells us was preserved in the Arundelian collection,

QUEEN ELIZABETH, OF YORK.

in which she made the most extravagant professions of her love to the usurper; but the whole context of her history, and indeed of that of her time, discredits almost the possibility of the fact. To return however to truth, Henry, having obtained some slender succours from the French Regency, took up his quarters at Rouen, for his more ready correspondence with his friends in England, and from thence, despairing now of obtaining Elizabeth, sent an offer of marriage to the sister of Sir Walter Herbert, a man of princely wealth and power in Wales, through whose means he hoped to secure the support of that country. Fortunately for him, his agent found it impossible to reach the place of his destination, for, had that treaty succeeded, the whole of those Yorkists who had promised him their support would have abandoned his cause. The Welsh, however, were already nearly unanimous in his favour, and his news from England scarcely less encouraging. He sailed from the coast of France in August, 1485, and landed at Haverfordwest, and Richard, whom this critical state of affairs had obliged to suspend his suit to Elizabeth, advanced to meet his rival, and was slain in Bosworth Field.

The Princess was at that time confined in the castle of Sheriff Hutton, in Yorkshire. She was invited to repair to London with all speed, and Henry, while she was on her journey, renewed to his Privy Council his promise to marry her. He had secretly determined, however, to defer the consummation till after his coronation, from a jealous apprehension that some inference of a participation of title with his Queen might be drawn from the fact of their being crowned together, and still more from a hope that the Parliament might be prevailed on previously to settle, as indeed it did, the crown on himself solely. At length, on the eighteenth of January, 1486, the marriage was solemnized with uncommon pomp, and celebrated by the whole people of the realm with a joy scarcely ever paralleled on any similar occasion, but the coronation of the Queen was unaccountably

QUEEN ELIZABETH, OF YORK

deferred till the twenty-fifth of November, 1488, to the great disgust of the friends to her family, whom indeed Henry held in a degree of hatred which the coldness and cunning of his nature was insufficient to enable him wholly to dissemble.

Elizabeth's history, as connected with public affairs, closes with her marriage; and the rudeness, the ignorance, or the fears, of those who have written of the royal persons of her time have left the circumstances of her domestic life almost wholly unveiled. Lord Bacon tells us that the King, "all his life time, shewed himself no indulgent husband towards her, though she was beautiful, gentle, and fruitful, but that his aversion towards the house of York was so predominant in him as it found place not only in his wars and councils, but in his chamber and bed." If she loved her mother with that genuine filial tenderness, which is always heightened by participation in calamity, she could not possibly have cherished much affection for her husband, who persecuted the Queen Dowager till her death with a severity far beyond the measure even of the offence which she has been here stated to have offered to him. One of the first acts of his reign was to seize all her estates, and personal property, and to imprison her for her life, without any legal proceeding, in the monastery of Bermondsey.

Queen Elizabeth of York died in childbirth, in the Tower of London, on her birth-day, the eleventh of February, 1502, and was buried in Westminster Abbey, having borne to Henry three sons, and four daughters, in the following order. Arthur, Prince of Wales, who died of a consumption, at Ludlow Castle, on the second of April, 1502, in the sixteenth year of his age, Henry, who succeeded to his father's crown; Edmund, created Duke of Somerset, who died at Hatfield, in Hertfordshire, about one year after his birth, Margaret, married first to James the fourth, King of Scotland, and secondly to Archibald Douglas, Earl of Angus; Elizabeth, who died at Eltham, on the fourteenth of

QUEEN ELIZABETH, OF YORK.

September, 1495, between the third and fourth years of her age; Mary, wife of Louis the twelfth, King of France, afterwards married to Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, and Catherine, the infant who caused her mother's death, and scarcely survived her.



THE EARL OF DERBY

THOMAS STANLEY EARL OF DERBY

OB. 1501

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF BOTTIN IN THE COLLECTION OF

THE RIGHT HONORABLE THE EARL OF DERBY

THE EARL OF DERBY

THOMAS STANLEY,

FIRST EARL OF DERBY,

OF a family always as much distinguished for public and private worth as by the antiquity of its dignities, and the extent of its domains, was the eldest son of Thomas first Lord Stanley, and Knight of the Garter, by Joan, daughter and heir of Sir Robert Gousill. His ancestors for three generations had held eminent offices in the State and Court under the three Monarchs of the House of Lancaster, the last of whom, Henry the sixth, his father served for many years in the arduous station of Lord Lieutenant of Ireland; in negotiating several treaties with Scotland; and, finally, in the post of Lord Chamberlain of the royal household. The storm however in which that dynasty and so many of its friends perished passed favourably over him, and his heir, the subject of this memoir, on whom no mark of royal favour seems to have fallen in the preceding reign, was on the 24th of May, in the first year of Edward the fourth, 1461, summoned to Parliament by the title of Baron Stanley, having previously succeeded to the great estates of his father, who died in 1459.

We seek in vain in the history of those times for the chain of anecdote which at once enlivens, elucidates, and connects, the biography of milder and later days. It is however scarcely to be doubted that the marriage of Lord Stanley, which occurred about this period, with a daughter of Richard Neville, Earl of Salisbury, whose brother, the celebrated Warwick, had placed Edward the fourth on the Throne, introduced him to the favour of that Prince. Warwick, the versatility of whose loyalty is so conspicuous in the story of that reign, embraced soon after the fallen fortunes of the House of Lancaster, importuned Lord

THOMAS STANLEY.

Stanley to join him in arms against Edward, and received a firm denial. He was now appointed Steward of the royal household, and in 1474 attended the King in his warlike expedition into France, for the aid of which he levied from his estates, and equipped, forty horse, and three hundred archers. In this enterprise little seems to have occurred worthy of note, but it may be presumed that proof was not wanting of his military talents, since in the invasion of Scotland by Richard Duke of Gloucester, in 1482 the command of the right wing of the army, amounting to four thousand men, was intrusted to his charge, at the head of which force he carried Berwick by assault, and performed several other signal services. During his absence the King died, and Richard returned to assume the supreme government, under the title of Protector.

It was nearly at this period that Lord Stanley, who had become for the second time a widower, married Margaret of Lancaster, mother of Henry Tudor, Earl of Richmond, a match in which, considering subsequent events, it is difficult to conceive that political views had not some considerable share. There was, it is true, no material disparity in the age or rank of the parties, but the Countess, who was distinguished for a rigour of devout practice uncommon even in those times, had made a vow, previously to this her third marriage, never to admit another husband to her bed, and Stanley had subscribed to the condition. Richard however shewed no inclination to prevent their union, and indeed Stanley seemed daily to rise in his favour. He was appointed in the following year, with Lord Hastings, to superintend chiefly the preparations for the young Edward's coronation, and was so employed when that remarkable scene which ended in the arrest and death of the latter nobleman occurred at the Council Table in the Tower. Stanley received a severe wound in the head, which it can scarcely be supposed was accidental, from the poll axe of one of the soldiers introduced by Richard on that occasion, was taken into custody on the spot, and committed, with some other Privy Counsellors, to close confinement.

FIRST EARL OF DERBY.

Amidst the doubts and obscurities which cloud the history of this period, it is pretty clear that Lord Stanley and the rest were convinced of Richard's designs on the Crown, and were preparing to counteract them, probably without having at that time concerted the means. He was in fact suddenly placed on the Throne, by a sort of popular election, within a month after, when Stanley was not only unexpectedly liberated, and replaced in his office of Steward of the Household, which had been vacated by the death of Edward the fourth, but raised to the exalted dignity of High Constable of England, and invested with the Garter. The Countess his wife too was appointed to bear, as she did, the train of Richard's Queen at her coronation. These splendid instances of the tyrant's complaisance were dictated by fear. Stanley's eldest son, Lord Strange, a title which he had derived from his marriage with the heiress to that Barony, was then strongly suspected to be taking measures on his estates in Lincolnshire to oppose Richard by force of arms, and the usurper hoped by these favours to his father to reclaim him, and to win the family to his interest. His authority however was presently threatened in other quarters of the country, when a stupendous event occurred which for a time disconcerted all the plans of his opponents. The sons of Edward the fourth suddenly disappeared, and were reported to have died. The declarations of history on this singular subject, and the doubts which have been cast on them, are equally well known.

To the difficulties likely to impede the expulsion of Richard was now added that of determining on a successor to the throne, and this was solved chiefly by the advice and intrigues of Henry Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, who had largely aided in raising him to it. This great nobleman, who had suddenly become Richard's implacable enemy, suggested to the widow of Edward the fourth, and to the Countess of Richmond, that marriage between the son of the one and the daughter of the other, which has been poetically called "the union of the roses," and proposed

FIRST EARL OF DERBY.

between his affection to the life of his son, who was a prisoner in Richard's camp, and his regard to his honour, pledged to Richmond. Richard in that instant dispatched a messenger to him, saying that "he had sworn by God's death to cut off Strange's head if Stanley did not instantly join him." The struggle was short. The noble Stanley, with Roman spirit, answered, that "he had more sons, and could not promise to come to him at that time," and instantly rushed into the battle for Richmond. "The tyrant," to use the words of the Chronicle lately quoted, "as he had sworn to do, ordered the Lord Strange to be beheaded at the instant when the two armies were to engage, but some of his council, abhorring that the innocent young gentleman should suffer for his father's offence, told the usurper 'now was a time to fight, and not to execute;' advising him to keep him prisoner till the battle was over. The tyrant hearkened to their advice, and commanded the keepers of his tents to take him into custody till he returned from the combat. By this means the Lord Strange escaped the King's revenge, equally bloody and unjust. The keepers of the tents delivered him to his father, the Lord Stanley, after the fight, and for saving him were taken into the new King's favour, and preferred." After the victory, Stanley, or, as some have said, his brother, Sir William, placed on Richmond's head a crown which Richard had worn on his helmet in the battle, (absurdly supposed by some writers to have been the royal diadem, but properly described by Lord Verulam as "a crown of ornament,") and proclaimed him King, by the title of Henry the seventh.

Lord Stanley's expectations of reward for his signal services seem to have been moderate, and the proofs of Henry's gratitude were certainly not abundant. On the twenty-seventh of October, 1485, he was created Earl of Derby, on the thirtieth of the same month was nominated a commissioner for executing the duties of Lord High Steward at the coronation, and on the fifth of the following March was again appointed Constable of England for

THOMAS STANLEY, FIRST EARL OF DERBY.

his life On the occasion of the baptism of Prince Arthur he was complimented with the office of godfather, and in 1496 was employed in the treaties of peace concluded in that year with the Archduke of Austria, and the King of France He died, as appears by the probate of his will, in 1504, and was buried in the north aisle of the priory church of Burscough, near Latham, in Lancashire, a foundation which owed its origin to his ancestors He married, first, Eleanor, daughter of Richard Neville, Earl of Salisbury, secondly, as has been already observed, Margaret, mother to King Henry the seventh, but left issue only by his first lady, who brought him six sons and four daughters. Of the sons, Thomas and Richard, the two eldest, and William, the fourth, died in infancy, George, the third son, succeeded to the titles and estates, Edward was advanced by Henry the seventh to the Barony of Monteagle, and James, the youngest, was a priest, and died Bishop of Ely The daughters were Jane, Catherine, and Anne, who died young and unmarried, and Margaret, who became the wife of Sir John Osbaldeston, of Osbaldeston, in Lancashire

MARGARET OF LANCASTER,

MOTHER OF KING HENRY THE SEVENTH

WE must form our opinion of this illustrious lady rather from inferences than from facts. The darkness of the distant age in which she lived allows us but an uncertain view of the several features of her character, but cannot wholly shroud from our observation the mild splendour which seems to rest on every part of it. She appears to have united to the strictest piety the practice of all the moral virtues, and to have chastened, while she properly cherished, the grandeur of royalty by the indulgence of domestic affections, and the retired exercise of a mind at once philosophic and humble. She stepped widely, it is true, out of the usual sphere of her sex, to encourage literature by her example and her bounty, but she cautiously confined herself within it, to avoid any concern in the government of the state after Henry had mounted the throne. She loved him as her son, and obeyed him as her sovereign, with equal simplicity, and seemed to have forgotten that, in the opinion of no small party, he reigned in some measure by her tacit appointment. History surely has treated her rather with complaisance than with justice, but we have lost in the lapse of years most of the positive evidence of her merits, and the careless wit of the most accomplished and popular recorder of biographical anecdotes that our day has produced, has yet further depreciated those merits by wanton and misplaced ridicule.

Henry, however, derived from her a most imperfect title, if any, to the throne. She was the only child of John Beaufort, Duke of Somerset, by Margaret, daughter and heir of John, Lord Beauchamp of Powyke, and widow of Sir John St. John. Her

MARGARET OF LANCASTER.

father was second born son, but at length heir, of John Beaufort, Earl of Somerset, who was eldest son of John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, by his third Duchess, Catherine Swynford : but the children of John of Gaunt by that Lady were born before marriage, and had been invested, by a royal charter, confirmed by Parliament, with all the rights of legitimacy, save the inheritance of the Crown, with regard to which that charter is wholly silent. Her first marriage too, the sole issue of which was Henry, though it had in it yet more of royalty than her birth, was totally out of the line of that inheritance, for her husband, Edmund of Hadham, Earl of Richmond, though better known by the general description of brother to Henry the sixth, was in fact but the son of that Prince's mother, Catherine, daughter of Charles the sixth, King of France, by her second husband, Owen Tudor, a private gentleman of Wales. Such, however, in that rude age were the ignorance or the contempt of law, and the rage of party, that the Lancastrians were inclined to assert Henry's right under the mere authority of these shadows of descent, and were cooled and dissuaded by the prudence of his mother. She remained in retirement, affecting a perfect unconcern as to public affairs, and such good-will and submission to Richard the third, that she came to London purposely to hold up the train of his Queen at their coronation. She besought him, with seeming frankness and simplicity, to receive her son into his presence and favour, and to permit him to offer his hand to one of the Princesses, daughters of Edward the fourth. Meanwhile she treated secretly with the Duke of Buckingham, who, from Richard's great friend, had become his bitterest enemy, and with the Queen Dowager, for that marriage, and settled with them many of the preliminary steps to the great event which succeeded. These negotiations, however, which were conducted chiefly by Morton, Bishop of Ely, were not long unknown to Richard. Henry, with his followers, were attainted, and Margaret, with a lenity which could have arisen only from fear, was confined to the house of her then

husband, the Lord Stanley, and released by the final overthrow of Richard

The exaltation of her son to the throne seems to have been the signal for her retreat from all public concerns ; but she did not abandon the Court. We find her constantly a party in all the splendid feasts and ceremonies of Henry's reign which have been recorded , a fact which clearly contradicts those who have reported that her piety was of the gloomy and ascetic cast. That she was sincere and regular in devotion has been abundantly proved, and penance was one of the duties enjoined by her church. She practised it therefore with severity, even to the use of inner garments and girdles of hair-cloth , but when the performance of her task permitted, she could throw them off, and, with a cheerful heart, enjoy, as well as acknowledge, the blessings which had been lavished on her. The nature and character indeed of her numerous and splendid public foundations tend to acquit her of any suspicion of blind and superstitious bigotry, for they were rather dedicated to learning and charity than to religion ; and we need no better proof of her affection to those institutions than the personal attention which she bestowed on their progress. St John's and Christ's Colleges, in Cambridge, were erected and endowed at her sole charge. She founded a perpetual divinity lecture in that University, and another in that of Oxford, where she constantly maintained also a great number of poor scholars, under tutors appointed and paid by herself , an almshouse near Westminster Abbey, for poor women, and a free-school at Wimbourne, in Dorsetshire. Her constant counsellor in these, and indeed in all her designs and actions, was her chaplain and confessor, the wise, learned, pious, and candid, John Fisher, for whom, in the year 1504, she obtained the See of Rochester. The following character of her, extracted from the oration delivered by that Prelate at her funeral, the second period in which so evidently glances at the ruling fault in her son's disposition, has an air of such simple fidelity, and asserts so

MARGARET OF LANCASTER.

many facts which must have been then of public notoriety, that we can scarcely doubt its truth, especially if we consider with it the reputation of him by whom it was pronounced.

“ She was bounteous and lyberal to every person of her knowledge or acquaintance. Avarice and covetyse she most hated, and sorowed it full moche in all persons, but specially in ony that belonged unto her. She was of syngular easyness to be spoken unto, and full eurtayse answer she would make to all that came unto her. Of marvayllous gentyleness she was unto all folks, but specially unto her owne, whom she trustede, and loved ryghte tenderly. Unkynde she woulde not be unto no creature, ne forgetful of ony kyndeness or servyce done to her before, which is no lytel part of veray nobleness. She was not vengeable ne cruell, but redy anone to forgete and to forgyve injurys done unto her, at the least desyre or mocyon made unto her for the same. Mereyfull also and pyteous she was unto such as was grieved and wrongfully troubled, and to them that were in poverty and sekeness, or any other mysery. She was of a singular wisdom, ferre passyng the comyn rate of women. She was good in remembrance, and of holdyng memory, a redye witte she had also to conceive all thyngs, albeit they were ryghte derke. Righte studious she was in bokes, which she had in greate number, both in Englysh, and in Latin, and in Frenshe, and, for her exercise, and for the profyte of others, she did translate divers matters of devoeyon out of the Frenshe into Englyshe. In favou, in words, in gesture, in every demeanour of herself, so grete nobleness did appear, that what she spake or dyd it merveyllousley became her. She had in a maner all that was playsable in a woman, either in soul or body.”

The translations here spoken of by Fisher, at least such of them as are now known, were “The Mirror of Gold for the sinful Soul,” from a French translation of a book in Latin, intituled “Speculum aureum Peccatorum,” and the fourth book of Geison’s treatise of the Imitation of Christ, also from a

MARGARET OF LANCASTER.

French version of the Latin original. A detailed account of these infinitely rare pieces, which are among the earliest essays of English printing, may be found in Ballard's *Memoirs of Learned Ladies*.

In treating of one with regard to whom we possess so few evidences nothing that has been proved ought to be omitted. I doubt, however, whether any apology may be necessary for the insertion of a letter from Margaret to the King, her son, from Dr. Howard's *Collection of Papers*, though the matters to which it relates are of a private, and indeed insignificant, nature; for the marks which it exhibits of a mind at once prudent and active, of a kind heart, and particularly of parental fondness, render it highly interesting. It is, perhaps, too, the most polished specimen extant of the epistolary style of her time. I have taken the liberty only to modernize the obsolete orthography, which, in the original, would render the whole nearly unintelligible to most readers.

“ My dearest, and only desired joy in this world,

“ With my most hearty loving blessings, and humble commendations, I pray our Lord to reward, and thank your Grace, for that it hath pleased your Highness so kindly and lovingly to be content to write your letters of thanks to the French King for my great matter, that so long hath been in suit, as Master Welby hath shewed me your bounteous goodness is pleased. I wish, my dear heart, if my fortune be to recover it, I trust you shall well perceive I shall deal towards you as a kind loving mother; and, if I should never have it, yet your kind dealing is to me a thousand times more than all that good I can recover, if all the French King's might be mine withal. My dear heart, if it may please your Highness to licence Master Whytstongs for this time to present your honourable letters, and begin the process of my cause, for that he so well knoweth the matter, and also brought me the writings from the said French King, with his other letters to his Parliament at Paris, it should be greatly to my help, as I

MARGARET OF LANCASTER.

think, but all will I remit to your pleasure, and, if I be too bold in this, or any of my desires, I humbly beseech your Grace of pardon, and that your Highness take no displeasure.

“ My good King, I have now sent a servant of mine into Kendall, to receive such annuities as be yet hanging upon the account of Sir William Wall, my Lord's chaplain, whom I have clearly discharged, and, if it will please your Majesty's own heart, at your leisure, to send me a letter, and command me that I suffer none of my tenants be retained with no man, but that they be kept for my Lord of York, your fair sweet son, for whom they be most meet, it shall be a good excuse for me to my Lord and husband, and then I may well, and without displeasure, cause them all to be sworn, the which shall not after be long undone. And, where your Grace shewed your pleasure for . . . the bastard of King Edward's, Sir, there is neither that, or any other thing I may do by your commandment, but I shall be glad to fulfil to my little power, with God's grace. And, my sweet King, Fielding, this bearer, hath prayed me to beseech you to be his good Lord in a matter he sueth for to the Bishop of Ely (now, as we hear, elect) for a little office nigh to London. Verily, my King, he is a good and well ruled gentleman, and full truly hath served you, well accompanied, as well at your first as all other occasions, and that causeth us to be the more bold, and gladder also, to speak for him, howbeit my Lord Marquis hath been very low to him in times past, because he would not be retained with him, and truly, my good King, he helpeth me right well in such matters as I have business within these parts. And, my dear heart, I now beseech you of pardon of my long and tedious writing, and pray Almighty God to give you as long, good, and prosperous life as ever had Prince, and as hearty blessings as I can ask of God. At Calais Town, this day of St Anne, that I did bring into this world my good and gracious Prince, King, and only beloved son, by

Your humble servant, beadswoman, and mother,

MARGARET OF LANCASTER

This eminent lady was born in 1441, at Bletsbo, in Bedfordshire. The splendour of her rank, and the vast fortune to which she was presumptive heir, raised many competitors for her hand. Of these Edmund de la Pole, afterwards the last Duke of Suffolk of his family, and Edmund, Earl of Richmond, of whom some account has been already given, were selected for her choice, and she determined in favour of the latter. In an age so fond of miracles, and on an occasion so important as the marriage of a royal heiress, it is not strange that her choice should have been ascribed to supernatural dictation. "When the Lady Margaret, his mother," says Lord Bacon, at the conclusion of his life of Henry the seventh, "had divers great suits for marriage, she dreamed one night that one in the likeness of a Bishop, in pontifical habit," (who, by the way, the good Fisher assures us was St. Nicholas) "did tender her Edmund, Earl of Richmond, the King's father, for her husband." Richmond died in 1456, little more than a year after the nuptials, leaving his highly destined heir at the age of fifteen weeks, and Margaret, not long after became the wife of Sir Henry Stafford, second son to Humphrey, the great Duke of Buckingham, by whom also she was left a widow. She was once more married, for in those unhappy days no state could be more perilous than that of wealthy widowhood; but, to prove that she sought only a protector, she took on that occasion a vow of continency, administered by Bishop Fisher, which is said to be yet extant in the archives of St. John's College in Cambridge. Her third husband was Thomas, Lord Stanley, afterwards the first Earl of Derby of his name, whom she likewise survived. She died on the twenty-ninth of June, 1509, three months after the accession of her grandson, Henry the eighth, and was buried in the superb chapel then lately erected in Westminster Abbey.



Engraved by W. H. H.

CARDINAL WOLSEY

OB. 1530

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HOLBEIN IN THE COLLECTION AT

CHRIST CHURCH OXFORD

THE OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

CARDINAL WOLSEY.

THERE is much reason to suspect that few eminent characters in history have been more misrepresented than that of Wolsey. The interests, the passions, and the prejudices of those by whom alone he could have been well known were combined against him. They consisted of the most enlightened and powerful of each important class of his countrymen, and consequently guided the opinions of the rest. The reformers, of course, shewed him no favour, and the heads of the Anglo-Romish church beheld with secret anger the monopoly which he had formed of the favour of the Papal see, and the alacrity with which he aided the project for Henry's divorce. The nobility were not less jealous and fearful of his influence than indignant at the superior splendour assumed by a priest of obscure origin. When he suddenly declined from the enormous height on which his capricious master had placed him, policy, as well as inclination, prompted these several parties to pour the full tide of their vengeance on his reputation; to trample, at the foot of the throne, on the ruins of a fallen favourite, and, while they flattered Henry and Anne Boleyn by magnifying his defects, and depreciating his merits, to represent him to the nation as a singular instance of the injustice with which fortune sometimes showers her choicest gifts on the unworthy. The reformation, immediately succeeding, imposed silence on such as might have been able and willing to rescue his fame from undeserved obloquy, and consigned to utter oblivion all those little interesting and lively notices which are the safest guides to a correct judgment of the human character. The malice of his enemies could not however conceal from us that he ruled absolutely the political system of England during the many years in which

CARDINAL WOLSEY.

Henry's credit, as a monarch and a man, remained unsullied, and that the enormities of that reign commenced as soon as his ministry had concluded, and that his magnificence was equalled by his generosity, and his love of learning by his princely endeavours to diffuse it among his countrymen; that his wisdom was eminent, and that he possessed in that rude age the accomplishments of a gentleman and a courtier in a degree perhaps peculiar to himself.

His very birth was attacked by slander. He is commonly reported to have been the son of a butcher, of Ipswich, in Suffolk, but this tale seems to be satisfactorily refuted by the will of Robert Wuley (and we have ample evidence that the Cardinal in early life so spelled his surname), dated the twenty-first of September, 1496, and recorded in the Bishop's Court at Norwich. by which he gives all his lands and tenements in the parish of St. Nicholas, in Ipswich, and his free and bond lands in the parish of Stoke, to Joan, his wife, and the residue of his possessions to her, and his son Thomas, whose destination to the clerical profession he expressly mentions. Of those persons, who evidently possessed property of no small consideration, Wolsey was undoubtedly the offspring. He was born at Ipswich, in the month of March, 1471, and became a student in the University of Oxford so young, that he took the degree of Bachelor of Arts at the age of fourteen. He was afterwards elected a fellow of Magdalen college, and appointed master of the grammar school belonging to that house, where, among his other pupils, he instructed the three sons of Thomas Grey, Marquis of Dorset, who rewarded him by the gift of a rectory in Somersetshire, his first ecclesiastical preferment, and here we meet with another story to his prejudice, scarcely credible. Sir Amias Powlett, a neighbouring magistrate, is said to have punished him with the stocks, in his own parish, for inebriety, and we are told that he fled, overwhelmed with shame, from his cure. Can this scandalous tradition possibly be reconciled with the known fact that Deane, Archbishop of Canterbury, received him at that precise period as a domestic chaplain?

CARDINAL WOLSEY.

Upon the death of that Prelate, in the spring of 1504, he was retained in the same capacity by Sir John Nanfan, an ancient courtier, in some degree of favour with Henry the seventh, and at that time treasurer of Calais, and was by that gentleman presently after recommended to the King's service. He was now appointed one of the chaplains in the royal household, the treasurer of which, Sir Thomas Lovel, a wise man, and of much weight in Henry's councils and favour, presently discerned his superior merit, and distinguished him by his patronage, and he gained at the same time the esteem of Fox, Bishop of Winchester, a minister who enjoyed the King's peculiar confidence. On the recommendation of these statesmen, Henry, in 1508, sent him to Flanders, to make a personal communication to the Emperor, which he performed with such address, and within a period of time so inconceivably short, that he was received on his return, both by the King and Council, with the highest approbation. The rich Deanery of Lincoln, and other ecclesiastical preferments, were immediately bestowed on him, and these grants were among the last acts of that reign.

Doubtless he was already well known to Henry the eighth, and had probably acquired some share of that Prince's good graces before the death of the late King; but historians in their fondness for referring all that occurs in courts to intrigue, ascribe his sudden elevation to some political circumstances of the time. The affairs of the state were then wholly directed by Thomas, Earl of Surrey, soon after Duke of Norfolk, Lord Treasurer, and the Bishop of Winchester, who held the office of Secretary of State, and the Privy Seal. Jealousies subsisted between these great men, and Fox is said to have recommended Wolsey with peculiar earnestness, in the hope that he might become the instrument of supplanting the Treasurer in the King's favour. If this report be correct, the Bishop conceived his plan in an evil hour for himself, for Wolsey presently became so completely master of Henry's opinions and affections that both Fox and his rival were forced, for their own credit, to abandon the administration of affairs which they were

CARDINAL WOLSEY

no longer suffered to guide. To gain this ascendancy he had addressed himself at once to his master's wisdom and weakness, to his passions and prejudices, to his love of science and of pleasure, to his ambition for political distinction, and his earnest desire of despotic rule. Such was Wolsey's discernment, and such the versatility of his talents, that he fully succeeded in all

Henry, who on his accession had given him the office of Almoner, admitted him soon after into the Privy Council, loaded him with benefices, among which were the Deaneries of York and Hereford, and appointed him first Register, and then Chancellor, of the Order of the Garter but he now rose with the most unparalleled rapidity. In 1513 he was appointed Bishop of Tournay, in Flanders, and, a few months after, of Lincoln, in the autumn of the following year, he was promoted to the See of York, and succeeded Warham in the office of Lord High Chancellor; and on the seventh of September, 1515, obtained the Cardinal's hat. As the Court of Rome had now honoured him with its highest dignity, so presently after it invested him with the greatest powers it had to bestow, by a commission appointing him Legate à latere, which he received in the following year. In the meantime his revenues outstript even the measure of his preferments. He held, together with the See of York, the Bishoprick of Durham, which he afterwards exchanged for Winchester, valued, at rents scarcely more than nominal, those of Worcester, Hereford, and Bath, which had been given by Henry the seventh to foreigners, who resided in their respective countries, and had the rich abbey of St. Albans in commendam. His presents and pensions from several princes amounted to an immense annual sum. Such compliments were common in those days, and were openly accepted by ministers of state, not as bribes to seduce them from their loyalty, but as acknowledgments of their fair and honourable protection in their respective countries of the just interests of the donors. Indeed Wolsey's bitterest enemies have never ventured to breath a suspicion on his fidelity

CARDINAL WOLSEY.

His enormous income, which has been computed to exceed that of the Crown, he expended with a magnificence which, were it not the best authenticated part of his story, would seem utterly incredible. His houses, witness that yet remaining at Hampton, were palaces, and his domestic establishment was a Court, maintained with a brilliancy and order which few sovereign princes could emulate. He had eight hundred servants, of whom nine or ten were noblemen, fifteen knights, and forty esquires. He sat on a chair of state, under a canopy, and was approached with all the marks of respect paid to royalty, even to kneeling. Henry, who loved romantic splendour, and abhorred parsimony, encouraged these superb excesses, and even delighted to witness them. It has been usual to charge him with unreasonable pride, but the imputation will be found to rest only on a few instances of his jealous exaction of ceremonious deference to his ecclesiastical rank. Of that sort was his contest with the Primate Warham, on the question whether his cross should be borne before him in the diocese of Canterbury, a mere question of right and privilege. For the rest, cumbrous grandeur was the foible of the age, and in whom could it be more decorous than in him who represented the ruler of kings, and was himself the most powerful of subjects?

It is less easy to find an apology for his conduct in his character of Legate. Under the authority of that commission he persuaded Henry to allow him to erect a jurisdiction not only wholly new in the method of its constitution but assuming faculties independent of all law. It affected chiefly to enforce a just observance of religious and moral duties, particularly in cases where the means of legal correction had not been hitherto provided, and openly assumed, as well over the laity as the clergy, a right of inquisition and censure which till then had rarely been exercised even in the wild sallies of an undefined royal prerogative. He strove to invest it with a controul over the ecclesiastical courts, and to arrogate to it appeals from their judgment in testamentary cases. Warham, a priest of great humanity and mildness, at length complained to

CARDINAL WOLSEY

the King of these excesses, but without effect, and Wolsey persevered till a private individual had the courage to prosecute his judge, who was convicted in a court of law of gross malversation. Henry is said now to have reprehended the Cardinal with great severity, and he prudently restrained in some respects the authority of his court, which however subsisted while he held the office of Legate. Another undue exertion of his legantine power, less important, gave much offence. By a mandate, issued under that authority, he removed the sittings of the Convocation from St. Paul's, its very ancient place of meeting, to Westminster. This innovation was suggested by his hatred of Warham, whom he seems to have constantly persecuted by a series of petty injuries and insults. It is only in his warfare with that amiable prelate that we discover any abatements of the dignity of Wolsey's mind.

A detail of his political life would necessarily include a series of historical conjectures and reasonings more extensive than the plan of this work could allow, and of his personal story the peculiar circumstances which immediately followed his death have, as has been before observed, left us little but a few important facts, too well known to justify an enlarged repetition. One step only was wanting to raise him to the summit of human ambition. He naturally aspired to the papal chair, and Henry favoured his pretensions. On the death of Leo the tenth, in 1521, he became a candidate, and, though the election had ended before the arrival of a person whom he sent to Rome to cultivate his interests there, obtained a considerable support. The prelate who succeeded, and took the name of Adrian the sixth, survived little more than two years, when Wolsey made a second effort, and again failed. A letter of great length, dispatched by him to his agents at Rome on this latter occasion, has fortunately been preserved, and has been more than once published. It will remain a lasting testimony to the force, the activity, and the elegance of his mind; the delicacy of his feelings, and the exactness of his honour. The subtlety and minuteness with which he dissects the intrigues of the Conclave,

CARDINAL WOLSEY.

and the directions that he gives for steering through them without meanness or duplicity, reflect equal credit on his head and his heart ; and the whole is delivered in a graceful flow of expression, to which it may not be too bold to say that no parallel can be found in the epistolary remains of his time

Wolsey, though disappointed of the attainment of this mighty object, retained his accustomed influence in the Court of Rome. He had carried himself towards Julio de Medicis, the successful candidate, with an unusual generosity and sincerity in the affairs of the election, and the new Pontiff, from gratitude as well as interest, left no means untried for his gratification. It was about this time that the Cardinal conceived his superb plan for academical institutions at Oxford and Ipswich, and the Pope readily granted his licence for the suppression of a multitude of the smaller religious houses, and the diversion of their revenues to the erection and endowment of those colleges. Thus, according to Camden, six hundred and forty-five monasteries were dissolved. The measure excited a general murmur throughout the kingdom : the pious proclaimed it to be sacrilegious, and the poor, whose alms it curtailed, readily joined in the complaint. Henry himself, as is proved by letters from him still extant, permitted it with reluctance, but Wolsey was not to be deterred by ordinary opposition, and Oxford owes her magnificent Christ Church to his perseverance. His foundation at Ipswich, a projected school, of most extensive views, and admirable constitution, was not wholly completed at the time of his death, and presently fell to decay. It was perhaps deemed impolitic to suffer such a monument to his memory to flourish in the place of his birth.

His influence over the mind of his master seemed to increase with the years of his ministry, and the uniform prosperity which waited on his counsels gave, perhaps not altogether unjustly, a colour of wisdom in the eyes of Europe to the King's submission to his will, but he was doomed to fall a victim to Henry's passion, and his fate was interwoven with the King's sudden attachment

CARDINAL WOLSEY.

to Anne Boleyn. He was already beheld by that lady with aversion, for he had prevented her marriage with Lord Percy, whom she tenderly loved, and he had little room to doubt that she would exert her utmost influence with the King to his disadvantage. When he turned his view from his own danger to the frightful effects which the union of Henry to Anne could scarcely fail to produce both on the Church and the State, he foresaw the ruin of the grand scheme of policy by which he had so long and so gloriously governed both, the downfall of the ecclesiastical establishment itself; and the disgrace, both as a monarch and a man, of his master, whose reputation he had in a manner created. Convinced of Henry's earnest inclination to repudiate Catherine, but uncertain of the extent of his passion for Anne, and despairing of success in opposing both, he seems to have hoped that by a ready and humble acquiescence in the one he might possibly gain the means of counteracting the other. The warmth too with which he engaged in the prosecution of the divorce perhaps arose in some measure from a private and personal feeling, for the Emperor Charles the fifth, nephew to Catherine, had encouraged his hopes of the Popedom, and secretly undermined his interest, and it has been supposed that his conduct on this great occasion was influenced by a spirit of revenge.

The process against the Queen was commenced early in the year 1528, and Wolsey, together with another Cardinal, sent to England expressly for that purpose, were by a Bull from Rome constituted the judges. The novelty of such a jurisdiction, and the extreme delicacy, as well as importance, of the case, together with the necessity of repeated references to the Pope, and constant prevarication in his answers, so protracted the suit, that at the end of twelve months the probability of any speedy decision, which had long been gradually decreasing, seemed utterly hopeless. It was at this point of time that Wolsey began to decline in the King's favour. That eagerness for strict truth, which often overlooks obvious facts to seek it in nice enquiry, and endless conjecture

CARDINAL WOLSEY

has induced historical writers to ascribe his disgrace to a variety of causes, and each has his favourite prejudice. One finds it in the vengeance of Catherine and Anne Boleyn: another in the intrigues of the Papal Court; a third in the anger of Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, with whom the Cardinal had a furious quarrel, in open Court, on the day that the Queen's cause was adjourned to Rome; and a fourth in the discovery by a courtesan of that city of a letter written by Wolsey to the Pope's Secretary in direct opposition to the divorce. After all, it is highly probably that it arose from two very simple motives in the bosom of Henry himself

brutal resentment of the delay of the sentence, in opposition to his will, and anxiety to begin the reformation, on which he had now secretly determined, and in the prosecution of which it was impossible for Wolsey to have become an instrument.

The Pope's inhibition in the autumn of 1529 of further proceedings in England in the matter of the divorce was the final signal for Wolsey's fall, which, though not unexpected, was sudden. Henry, then on a progress, commanded his attendance at Grafton, in Northamptonshire. It was their last interview. The King, who received him courteously, and passed the most part of the day in frequent private conferences with him, seemed irresolute, but Anne, who was in the house, and to whom Henry at intervals repaid, is said to have turned the scale against him. He returned to London, where he learned that the Attorney-General was preparing an indictment against him, yet on the commencement of Michaelmas term he took his seat on the Chancery Bench with the accustomed solemnities. Two days after, on the eighteenth of October, the Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk, verbally commissioned by Henry, went to his house, to demand the Great Seal, which he refusing to deliver without a more authentic command, they procured a letter to him from the King, on sight of which he resigned it. His palace of York House, which stood on the site of Whitehall, with its innumerable precious contents, were afterwards seized, under the authority of an obsolete statute which will

CARDINAL WOLSEY.

presently be mentioned, and he was sent to an unfurnished house at Esher, in Surrey, which belonged to his See of Winchester, where he fell into a dangerous illness. The King now again hesitated; dispatched the physicians of the Court to attend him, and sent him, as a token of regard, a ring which Wolsey had formerly presented to him. He recovered his health, and was permitted to remove to the Palace of Richmond, which he had some years before received of Henry, in exchange for Hampton Court; and here he received a present from the King of ten thousand pounds, for he was now stripped of all his private property, as well as of his dignities and offices. This favourable disposition however soon changed, and Henry, surrounded by numbers who now ventured to declare their enmity to the humbled favourite, commanded him to retire to York.

In the meantime his prosecution had been pushed on with constant vigour. The charges against him were first preferred in the Star Chamber, on the first of October, by which Court he was declared guilty of the whole, and then remitted to the Parliament, which met on the third of the following month. The Lords sent down to the House of Commons, an accusation against him, digested into forty-four articles, unproved, and mostly incapable of proof, but the Commons, even in that despotic reign, refused to lend themselves to such flagrant injustice, and it was found necessary to indict him of having procured Bulls from Rome, particularly that by which he was constituted Legate, contrary to a law of Richard the second, called "the Statute of Provisors." These alledged offences had been committed by him, and he had for many years, exercised the powers that he derived from them, not only with the countenance and approbation of the King and Parliament, but under a formal permission expressly granted by Henry himself. The miserable Wolsey however durst not produce that licence, pleaded guilty to the indictment, declared his ignorance of the Statute, and threw himself on the mercy of the tyrant, who on the twelfth of February, 1530, N. S. granted him a pardon, the

CARDINAL WOLSEY.

peculiar plenitude of which has been more than once remarked by our most eminent lawyers

The sequel of this tragedy is so monstrous that history, unsupported by the evidence of public records, might have striven in vain to convince after ages of its credibility. Wolsey having retired to his Archbishoprick of York, and to the possession of its revenues, which had been restored to him when he received the royal pardon ; shorn of all other beams of his former grandeur, and deprived of all hope of regaining any other portion of it ; was suffered to pass little more than one month in the commencement of a life of innocence, and piety, and resignation, when he was arrested by the Earl of Northumberland, at Cawood, one of the houses of his See, for high treason, grounded on the self same charges which had been so lately, and so amply remitted. The events of his few succeeding days are perhaps more generally known than any other part of our history. As his persecutors were dragging him on towards London, he died on the way, broken hearted, at the Abbey of Leicester, on the thirtieth of November, 1530.



148. D. V. 1. 1.

WILLIAM WARHAM ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY

OB. 1532.

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HOLBEIN IN THE POSSESSION OF

HIS GRACE THE ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY

WILLIAM WARHAM,

ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.

THIS very respectable divine, who seems to have owed to a placid and humble temper, and to an innocent and candid prudence, the imperfect tranquillity with which for a long series of years he held the highest ecclesiastical station, in a time the most inauspicious to churchmen, especially of his persuasion, was the eldest son of Robert Warham, a small gentleman, or yeoman, of Hampshire, by Elizabeth, his wife, and was born at Okeley, in that county, about the year 1456. He received the education requisite to fit him for the clerical profession, which at that time included the study of the civil law, in Winchester School, and at Winchester College, in Oxford, and was in 1475 admitted fellow of New College, where he soon after took the degree of Doctor of Laws. He quitted the university, in which he had held some reputable appointments, in 1488, with a high fame for his learning, and embraced the profession of an advocate in the Arches Court, in which he practised with much distinction and success. He became therefore, soon after his arrival, well known at the Court, for Henry the seventh delighted in civilians, and thought them of all others the best qualified for the management of niceties in affairs of state, particularly in those of foreign negotiation. Warham was accordingly sent, in 1493, with Sir Edward Poynings, on an embassy to Philip Duke of Burgundy, to persuade that Prince to withdraw his protection from the impostor, Perkin Warbeck, and discharged his mission so well, that Henry, on his return, appointed him Master of the Rolls. He sat in that office for nine years, a delay of preferment which was amply compensated for by the rapidity with which he afterwards rose to the

most exalted stations in Church and State, for on the eleventh of August, 1502, the Great Seal was delivered to him, as Lord Keeper, within a few weeks after he was placed in the See of London, on the first of the following January was appointed Lord Chancellor, and, in the ensuing March, translated to the Primacy. The favour of his master was marked by the unusual circumstances of pomp and ceremony attending his installation at Canterbury, in which Edward Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, the mightiest peer of the realm, condescended to officiate in the character of his Steward of the Household. To these high offices was added the dignity of Chancellor of that University which had lent its aid to qualify him for them, to which he was elected on the twenty-eighth of May, 1506.

His royal patron dying not long after that period, a new master succeeded, and presently Wolsey, a new planet, or rather comet, in the sphere of English politics, appeared, and soon eclipsed all competitors for favour. The mild and sober character of Warham by no means fitted him for contention with one whose vivacity and ardour in the execution of his schemes were equal to the ambition and subtlety with which they had been projected. Wolsey began by infringing on the dignified distinctions of the Primacy, one of which was, that the cross of no other prelate should be elevated in the same place with that of the Archbishop of Canterbury, Wolsey, however, would have his cross of the See of York borne before him even in the presence of Warham; and it has been said, though improbably enough, that he procured for himself from the Pope his famous commission of Legate à latere for the sake of gaining precedence in that peculiar point, to which end his station of Cardinal was insufficient. He then invaded the Primate's prerogative by erecting a court at Whitehall, for the proving of wills under his separate authority, and at length invested himself, in a great measure, through the efficacy of his Legantine power, with the government of the Anglican Church, both in spiritual and temporal affairs. Warham remon-

ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.

strated to him in vain, and at last appealed to the king, by some exertion of whose authority Wolsey's violence was somewhat curbed, and his anger against Warham proportionably provoked. Two original expostulatory letters from the Primate to the Cardinal may be found in the Cotton collection, the one complaining, at great length, of Wolsey's interference with the Archbishop's jurisdiction in a particular case, of no public importance; the other, a brief and more general representation of various injuries. This latter seems to merit insertion here, not only as a specimen of Warham's epistolary style, which was of the best of his time, but because the profoundly respectful method of expression affords so remarkable a proof of the awe in which Wolsey was held, even by an outraged Metropolitan of England.

“ Please it your good Grace to understande, I am informed that your Grace intendithe to interrupte me in the use of the prorogatives in the whiche my predeceessors and I, in the right of my church of Canterbury, hath been possessed by priviledge, custume, and prescription, tyme out of mynde, and, for the interruption of the same, your Grace is mynded, as I am informed, to depute Doctour Alan, whiche, if your Grace shulde do so (considering that not only all myne officers of my Courts th' Arches & th' Audieence, but also the Commissarie of my diocesse of Kente, and I myself, not only in matiers of suite of instance of parteys, but also in causes of correction dependinge before me and them, be continually inhibited by your officers) I shulde have nothings lefte for me and my officers to do, but shulde be as a shadoo and ymage of an Archbishop and Legate, void of auctoritie and jurisdiction, whiche shulde be to my perpetual reproche, and to my church a perpetual prejudice. Wherefore, inasmuche as I truste verely in your great goodnes that your Grace wool not be so extreme against me, and the right of my church before-named, I beseech your Grace, the premisses considered, to differ and respecte this matter tyll I may have communycation in this

WILLIAM WARHAM,

behaulfe with your Grace, when it shall please youe, at your leysure; and, your pleasure knowne, I will be redy to give attendance on your Grace, beseching you also to give credence to my chapellaine, Maister Wellys, this bearer, in suche matiers as he will shewe your Grace on my behaulfe At my manor at Croydon, the xvii day of Marche

At your Graces commandment,

WILL^M CANTUAR."

Wolsey, having perhaps abated somewhat of his persecution of Warham in ecclesiastical matters, attacked him next in his office of Chancellor. He had long been jealous of the interference of the Chancery with the authority of his Legantine Court, and his ambition readily suggested to him the most effectual remedy for the inconvenience. He became eager to possess the first lay office under the Crown, and the Archbishop, fatigued with contention, and advancing to old age, was easily prevailed on to gratify him, in the hope to purchase by this concession the quiet enjoyment for the remainder of his life of those rights, at least, of the Primacy which had no concern with matters of state. He resigned the Great Seal on the twenty-third of December, 1515, and the King immediately delivered it to the Cardinal. Warham now retired from all public business, except that of his church, and passed yet many years in his diocese, in a faithful discharge of all the duties of his high calling, in the enjoyment of private friendships, and in the cultivation and patronage of literature. He lived in the strictest intimacy with Erasmus, to whom he gave the rectory of Aldington, in Kent. They corresponded with the freedom of equals, and exchanged portraits with the affection of brothers. "Erasmus in one of his epistles," says Wood, "so commends him for humanity, learning, integrity, and piety, that in the conclusion he saith, 'nullam absoluti præsulis dotem in eo desideres'" His liberality was unbounded, and his contempt of wealth almost blameable. He expended the immense sum of

ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.

thirty thousand pounds in repairing and adorning the different episcopal houses of his See, and left scarcely sufficient to pay his debts. When he lay on his death-bed, having occasion to enquire of his steward what money he had in his hands, and being answered only thirty pounds, he calmly replied, “satis viatici ad cœlum.”

The main fault in his conduct, for which much might be pleaded in extenuation, considering the characters of the two masters whom he served, was a servile obsequiousness to their will on all occasions. When the question of the supremacy of Henry the eighth was propounded to the Convocation, and Cromwell had concluded his long argument for it, every mouth in that assembly was sealed by fear, when the Primate, after a short pause, declared that “silence was to be taken for consent,” and reported the judgement of the Convocation accordingly. Bishop Burnet tells us that “his speeches in Parliament were sermons, begun with texts of Scripture, which he expounded, and applied to the business they were to go upon, stuffing them with the most fulsome flattery of the King that was possible” That historian however, in another part of his chief work, says of him, with much apparent fairness, that he was “a great canonist, an able statesman, a dextrous courtier, and a favourite of learned men that he always hated Cardinal Wolsey, and would never stoop to him, esteeming it below the dignity of his see: that he was not so peevishly engaged to the learning of the schools as others were, but set up and encouraged a more generous way of knowledge; yet that he was a severe persecutor of those whom he thought heretics, and inclined to believe idle and fanatical people, as appeared in the matter of the Maid of Kent” The truth is that, as the character of Archbishop Warham wanted those bold features which history so readily records, it has been hitherto but slightly touched on. As a churchman, he seems to have been pious and sincere; zealous for the persuasion in which he had been bred, and occasionally proving that zeal in instances of

WILLIAM WARHAM

intolerant severity as a statesman, rather esteemed for honesty and experience than for acuteness as a judge, laborious in his attention to the business of his Court, and pure in his administration of justice as a man, mild, cheerful, affable, and benevolent. If we may not reckon him with the greatest, he may certainly be esteemed among the best, public men of the age in which he flourished. He died on the twenty-third of August, 1532, in the house of his nephew, William Warham, Archdeacon of Canterbury, at Hackington, near that city, and was buried with the most simple privacy in a small chapel, which he had built in his cathedral for that purpose.

A tradition exists, too ancient, and too respectable, to admit of reasonable doubt, that the fine picture from which the present engraving was made was presented by Holbein to the Archbishop, inclosed in the identical frame in which it yet remains.

SIR THOMAS MORE.

IN composing, several years since, a small sketch of the life of this admirable person, which has been published in another biographical collection, I summed up his character as it appeared to me, in terms which it may be pardonable to repeat here, for a second and more exact review of his conduct has furnished no ground for change of opinion, and to alter the diction of a few simple passages which the same pen could perhaps scarcely otherwise express, would produce but a silly counterfeit of originality. I shall perhaps take a similar liberty in a few subsequent instances, in the progress of the present work, and beg leave, once for all, to offer this apology for the practice, as well as for having said here so much on the subject.

To say that Sir Thomas More's was the brightest character of the age in which he lived, an age which exhibited the ferocity of uncivilised man without his simplicity, and the degeneracy of modern manners without their refinement, were praise beneath his merit, to challenge the long and splendid series of English biography to produce his equal at any period, might be deemed presumptuous but, if the wise and honest statesman, the acute and incorrupt magistrate, the loyal but independent subject, constitute an excellent public man, if the good father, the good husband, and the good master, the firm friend, the moral though witty companion, the upright neighbour, the pious christian, and the patient martyr, form a perfect private character, ecce homo

He was born in Milk street, Cheapside, about the year 1480, the only son of Sir John More, a Judge of the King's Bench, by his wife, the daughter of a Mr. Handcombe, of Holywell, in Bedfordshire. He acquired the learned languages at the hospital

SIR THOMAS MORE

of St Anthony, in the parish of St Benet Fink, in London, then a school of high reputation, from whence he was removed to St Mary Hall, or, as some have said, to Canterbury College, now Christchurch, in the University of Oxford. The primate, Cardinal Morton, in whose family he passed some of his earliest years, in the character of a gentleman attendant, according to the fashion of that time, charmed as much by his wit as by his learning, often said to the great persons at his table, "this child here waiting, whosoever shall live to see it, will prove a marvellous great man," and the prediction soon began to be verified, for, even at the age of eighteen, the literary fame which he had acquired provoked the envy of some German critics, and the praise of others. Erasmus, at that time, wrote to him in the behalf of Brixius, one of the former class, who had attacked him in an invective intitled "Antimorus," seriously intreating his mercy to that old and experienced disputant.

Just at this period he left the university, and began to study the law in New Inn, and afterwards in Lincoln's Inn, passing his hours of leisure in a circle, of which he naturally became the centre, composed of those whose wisdom and learning could best inform, and of those the vivacity of whose genius could most delight. At the age of twenty-one, when he had barely been called to the station of an utter barrister, he was elected a member of the House of Commons, and was presently distinguished there for a freedom of conduct which, at that time, could have arisen only from the purest motives. In that spirit he opposed in 1503 the requisition of a subsidy and three-fifteenths, for the marriage of the Princess Margaret, daughter of Henry the seventh, to the King of Scots, with such force and honesty of reasoning, that the rejection of the demand is said to have been ascribed almost wholly to his endeavours. A privy counsellor ran immediately from the house, and told the King that "a beardless boy had overthrown all his purpose," and Henry satisfied at once his anger and his avarice by committing, under some

SIR THOMAS MORE

frivolous pretences, the young senator's father to the Tower, and forcing him to purchase his release by the payment of a fine of one hundred pounds. More, however, became so alarmed at the King's resentment that he retired for a considerable time from the parliament, and from his professional avocations, and during that interval, which seems to have been passed in a place of concealment, he studied geometry, astronomy, and music, in which last he much delighted, and exercised his pen in historical composition.

He returned at length to his practice at the bar, which presently became so extensive as to produce, according to his own report to his son-in-law, and biographer, Mr. Roper, an annual income of four hundred pounds, equal at least to five thousand in our days. He remained however in disfavour at court till after the accession of Henry the eighth, who, with all his faults, easily discovered, and generally encouraged, true merit. The King sent for him by Wolsey, and, on the first taste of his extraordinary powers, determined to employ him. Foreign negotiation was then held to be the most essential part of the education of a statesman. More was directed therefore in 1516 to accompany Tonsal, Bishop of Durham, one of his intimate friends, to Flanders, for the renewal of a treaty of alliance with the Archduke of Austria, afterwards Charles the fifth, and on his return was warmly invited by Henry to devote himself to the service of the Crown, which his prudence, and indeed his interests, induced him at that time, and for some years after, to decline. The King at length pressed him with such earnestness that he durst no longer refuse, and in 1519 he accepted the office of a Master of the Requests, was soon after knighted, and sworn of the Privy Council, and in the succeeding year appointed Treasurer of the Exchequer. More's hesitation had been wholly unaffected. On the occasion of his becoming a Privy Counsellor, he expressed himself (according to Stapleton, one of his biographers,) to his bosom friend, Bishop Fisher, in these terms, and the passage is rendered the more valuable by the features which it discloses, on

SIR THOMAS MORE

such good authority, of Henry's character at that time. "I am come to the court extremely against my will, as every body knows, and as the King himself often twitteth me in sport for it, and hereto do I hang so unseemly, as a man not using to ride doth sit unhandsomely in his saddle. But our Prince, whose special and extraordinary favour towards me I know not how I shall ever be able to deserve, is so affable and courteous to all men, that every one who has never so little hope of himself may find somewhat whereby he may imagine that he loveth him; even as the citizens' wives of London do, who imagine that our Lady's picture, near the Tower, doth smile upon them as they pray before it. But I am not so happy that I can perceive such fortunate signs of deserving his love, and of a more abject spirit than that I can persuade myself that I have it already. yet, such is the virtue and learning of the King, and his daily increasing industry in both, that by how much the more I see his Highness increase in both these kingly ornaments, by so much the less troublesome this courtier's life seemeth unto me."

In 1523 he was chosen Speaker of the House of Commons, and in the following year, says Hakewel, of the House of Peers. In the former capacity he again distinguished himself by his firm opposition to a subsidy, and, personally, to Wolsey, who came to the house, in his usual splendor, to influence the decision by his presence. On a question having been previously debated whether they should receive him but with a few attendants, or with his whole train, More is reported to have said, "Masters, forasmuch as my Lord Cardinal lately, ye wot well, laid to our charge the lightness of our tongues, for things uttered out of this house, it should not in my mind be amiss to receive him with all his pomp; with his maces, his pillars, his poll-axes, his crosses, his hat, and the great seal too, to the intent that if he find the like fault with us, then we may be the bolder, from ourselves, to lay the blame on those whom his Grace bringeth with him." The favour of Henry, whose natural generosity of spirit then perhaps remained

SIR THOMAS MORE.

unabated, was not impaired by this unusual freedom. More, in 1526 was appointed Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster, in the following year was joined to Wolsey, and others, in an embassy to the Court of France, and in 1529 went with Toustal to Cambray, to secure the payment of certain sums due to the King from Charles the fifth, his success in which business won him the highest approbation. He was now Henry's most esteemed servant, and most familiar companion, but he had found some reasons to alter his opinion of his master's character. Roper informs us that, about this time, Henry coming suddenly, as he frequently did, to dine with More at his house at Chelsea, and walking long after dinner in the garden, with his arm about Sir Thomas's neck, Roper, after the King's departure, congratulated him on so distinguished a mark of royal kindness, observing that no one except Wolsey had ever before experienced such condescension. "I thank our Lord, son," replied More, "I find his Grace my very good Lord indeed, and I believe he doth as singularly favour me as any subject within this realm, howbeit, son Roper, I must tell thee I have no cause to be proud thereof, for if my head would win him a castle in France, it would not fail to go off."

Henry's mind was now wholly occupied by his long cherished project of the divorce. He had consulted and reasoned with More on that great subject, and had met with a firm opposition. So attached, however, was he to the man, or so anxious for the sanction of his coincidence, that he determined to gratify the one, or to bribe the other, by a grant of the first station under the crown. More was appointed on the twenty-fifth of October, 1530, to succeed the disgraced Cardinal in the office of High Chancellor, which had never before been held by a layman, and this was the first serious blow struck by Henry at the power of the priesthood. He entered on it with melancholy forebodings, which were too soon verified. With a Christian perfection, which, as has been well said, and by a dissenter too, was such as made him "not only an

honour to any particular form of Christianity, but to the Christian name and cause in general," his zeal for the Romish church was equalled only by the benevolent spirit in which he exercised it. He had for some time beheld in silent horror the gradual approaches to the downfall of that church, and was now called to a situation in which he was compelled either to aid its enemies with his counsels, and to ratify their decisions by his official acts, or to incur the severest penalties by his refusal. He virtuously preferred the latter, and, having persevered to the end in denying any degree of countenance to the proposed divorce, on the sixteenth of May, 1533, he resigned the seal, determined that it should never be placed by his hand on the instrument by which that process was to be concluded.

The definitive sentence was pronounced and published on the twenty-third, and the coronation of Anne Boleyn, to whom the impatient Henry had been for some time united, at least by the forms of matrimony, was fixed for the thirty-first of the same month. More, doubtless by the King's order, was pressed by several of the Bishops who were to officiate, to be present at the ceremony, for his reputation stood so high in the kingdom that even the slightest colour of approbation from him was esteemed important, but he steadfastly refused, and boldly declared to those prelates his conviction of the illegality of the marriage. Henry now sought to move him by terror. In the ensuing parliament a bill of attainder against him was agitated in the House of Peers, for misprision of treason in the affair of that enthusiast, or impostor, who was called the Holy Maid of Kent, and he was more than once cited before the Privy Council on other charges, but the evidence on each proved too weak even for the terrible fashion of that reign. The act of supremacy, which appeared in 1534, at length fixed his fate. When the oath prescribed by it was tendered to him he declined to take it, and was committed to the custody of the Abbot of Westminster, and, on a second refusal, a few days after, to the Tower of London.

SIR THOMAS MORE.

Endeavours were now again ineffectually used to win him by persuasion, while the kind and merciful Cranmer as vainly endeavoured to prevail on the King to dispense with the oath in More's case. After fifteen months' imprisonment, he was arraigned of high treason at the King's Bench bar, for denying the King's supremacy. Rich, the Solicitor-General, afterwards Chancellor, was the sole witness against him, and the testimony of that wretch, whose name should be consigned to eternal infamy, consisted in the repetition of speeches which he had artfully drawn from More, during a visit to his prison, in a familiar conversation, which Rich had commenced by expressly declaring that he had no commission to agitate in it any matter regarding the prosecution. Much even of this evidence Sir Thomas positively denied, but the jury found him guilty, and he was sentenced to be hanged, drawn, and quartered, a doom which Henry altered, in consideration of the high office which he had held. He was beheaded upon Tower Hill on the fifth of July, 1535, and his revered head was ignominiously exposed on London Bridge, from whence, after many days, it was privately obtained by his affectionate daughter, Roper, and by her placed in the vault of her husband's family, under a chapel adjoining to St. Dunstan's church in Canterbury. His body was interred in the chapel of the Tower, but afterwards removed, at the solicitation of that lady, to the parish church of Chelsea, and buried there, in the chancel, near a monument which he had some years before erected, with an inscription written by himself.

Perhaps of all the remarkable persons who adorned or disgraced the age in which he lived we are the most clearly acquainted with the life and character of Sir Thomas More, and thus, though few men have found more biographers, for his life has been ten times separately written and published, we owe chiefly to the perfect candour and sincerity which distinguished him. His acts and his sayings composed the history not only of his conduct but of his motives, and left to those who have written of him only the

SIR THOMAS MORE

simple task of collecting facts, to which the fondest partiality could add no further grace, and on which even malice could have cast no blemish. But he lived without enemies, and, since his death, Bishop Burnet only has dared to lift a pen against his memory. In his earnest devotion to the Catholic faith, and to the See of Rome, he was severe only to himself. The fury of conflicting zealots was calmed while they reflected on his virtues, and when Rome celebrated his canonization with a just and honest triumph, the church of England looked on in silent approbation. In his court no one ever presided with more wisdom, learning, and perspicacity, with a more rigid devotion to justice, or with more vigilance, impartiality, and patience when he quitted it, he left not a single cause undecided. The strictness of his loyalty, and his magnanimous independence, were always in perfect unison, because they flowed from one and the same source, an honest heart. In all the domestic relations the beauty of his life was unparalleled. Erasmus has left us a glowing picture of him, retired, at Chelsea, in the bosom of his family. The passage has been thus translated: "More hath built near London, upon the Thames, such a commodious house as is neither mean nor subject to envy, yet magnificent enough. There he converseth affably with his family, his wife, his son, and daughter in law, his three daughters, and their husbands, with eleven grandchildren. There is not any man living so affectionate with his children as he, and he loveth his old wife as well as if she were a young maid, and such is the excellence of his temper, that whatsoever happeneth that could not be helped, he loveth it as though nothing could have happened more happily. You would say there were in that place Plato's academy, but I do the house injury in comparing it to Plato's academy, where there was only disputations of numbers, and geometrical figures, and sometimes of moral virtues. I should rather call his house a school or university of christian religion, for there is none therein but readeth or studieth the liberal

SIR THOMAS MORE.

sciences their special care is piety and virtue: there is no quarrelling, or intemperate words, heard; none seen idle; which household discipline that worthy gentleman doth not govern by proud and haughty words, but with all kind and courteous favour. Every body performeth his duty, yet there is always alacrity, neither is sober mirth anything wanting”

MORE himself has proved the correctness of Erasmus's account in the dedication, to an intimate friend, of his *Utopia*, by expressions which I cannot help inserting here, for it is not easy to quit the story of his private life “Whilst I daily plead other men's causes,” says he (to use the words of his translator) “or hear them, sometimes as an arbitrator, other while as a judge: whilst this man I visit for friendship, another for business, and whilst I am employed abroad about other men's matters all the whole day, I leave no time for myself, that is for study for when I come home I must discourse with my wife, chat with my children, speak with my servants; and, seeing this must needs be done, I number it amongst my affairs, and needful they are, unless one would be a stranger in his own house: for we must endeavour to be affable and pleasing to whom either nature, chance, or, choice, hath made our companions; but with such measure it must be done that we don't maim them with affability, or make them of servants our masters, by too much gentle entreaty and favour Whilst these things are doing, a day, a month, a year, passeth. When then can I find any time to write? for I have not yet spoken of the time that is spent in eating and sleeping, which things alone bereave most men of half their life. As for me, I get only that spare time which I steal from my meat and sleep; which, because it is but small, I proceed slowly; yet, it being somewhat, I have now at length prevailed so much, as I have finished, and sent unto you, my *Utopia*.”

The chief singularity of his character was a continual disposition to excessive mirth, and the Lord High Chancellor of England

SIR THOMAS MORE

was perhaps the first dioll in the kingdom Lord Herbert, willing, for obvious reasons, to find fault with him, and unable to discover any other ground, censures the levity of his wit, and Mr Addison well observes that "what was philosophy in him would have been phrenzy in any one who did not resemble him, as well in the cheerfulness of his temper as in the sanctity of his life and manners" Feeling that gaiety was the result of innocence, he seems to have conceived that the active indulgence of it was a moral duty Among other hints of this remarkable opinion which are scattered in his works, speaking of the Utopian burials, at which he tells us none grieved, he says "when those to whom the deceased was most dear he come home, they rehearse his virtuous manneis, and his good deeds, but no part is so oft or gladly talked of as his merry death" That his own was such is well known. He had not been shaved during his long imprisonment, and after he had placed his neck on the block, he raised his hand, and put his beard forward, saying that it should not be cut off, for it had committed no treason His witticisms are to be still found in abundance even in every ordinary jest book, and none have been better authenticated.

That Sir Thomas More should have found leisure for most extensive and various exercise of his pen is truly astonishing In his youth he composed some pieces in English verse, which do him little credit, and would, had they not been his, have been long since forgotten They are intituled, "A merry jest, how a seijeant would learn to play a fider" "A rueful lamentation on the death of Elizabeth, wife of Henry the seventh" "Certain metries for the Book of Fortune" Ballads called "Lewys, the lost Lovci," and "Davy, the deer," and nine sets of lines, explanatory of as many devices painted on certain hangings in his father's house The first and last of these are supposed to have been his earliest productions. His prose works, in English, are a treatise on the text "Memoriae Novissima, et in æternum non peccabis." A Dialogue, treating of the worship of Images

and Reliques, praying to Saints, and Pilgrimages, and “touching the pestilent sects of Luther and Tyndale” “The Supplication of Souls,” written against Simon Fishe’s popular tract named “The Supplication of Beggars” “A Confutation of Tyndale,” in nine books “An Apology,” in answer to a book intituled “a Treatise of the division between the Spirituality and Temporality.”

“The Debellation of Salem and Bizance,” written in reply to an answer to that Apology “An Answer to the first part of the poisoned book which a nameless Heretic” (John Fith) “hath named ‘the Supper of the Lord.’” “A Dialogue of Comfort against Tribulation” “A Treatise to receive the blessed body of Christ, sacramentally and virtually both” The life of Picus, Earl of Mirandola, translated from the Latin, and several letters, among which are many to his family, beautifully illustrative of his character All these were collected, and published in 1557, in one very bulky volume, by his sister’s son, William Rastall, the eminent lawyer, together with an English translation of the *Utopia*

His Latin works are the *Lives of Edward the fifth, and Richard the third*, unfinished, which may be found translated, and completed, by Bishop Kennet, in the best general collection extant of English history The celebrated *Utopia*, of which twelve editions have been published in its original form, eleven in English, two in French, and one in Italian, and several smaller works, most of which were printed together at Louvain, in 1566, namely, “*Expositio Passionis Domini.*” “*Precationes ex Psalmis.*” “*Quod pro fide moris fugienda non est.*” “*Responsis ad convitia Martini Lutheri.*” “*Imploratio divini auxilii contra tentationem, cum insultatione contra Dæmones, ex spe et fiducia in Deum.*”

“*Epigrammata,*” “*Progymnasmata,*” “*Epistolæ,*” and “*Epistola ad Academiam Oxon.*” He also translated the *Dialogues of Lucian* into Latin, and wrote annotations on the works of that author

Sir Thomas More, when about the age of twenty-four, married

SIR THOMAS MORE.

Jane, daughter of John Colte, of Candish, in Suffolk, and of Newhall, in Essex, by whom he had an only son, John, and three daughters, Margaret, wife of William Roper, of Eltham, in Kent, uncle to the first Lord Teynham; Elizabeth, of John, son and heir of Sir John Dauntsey, and Cicely, of Giles Heron, of Shacklewell, in Middlesex. Their brother, who has been idly said to have possessed scarcely common understanding, married an heiress of the family of Cressacre, of Bainborough, in Yorkshire, and so acquired estates there, which descended in the male line till the year 1795, when they fell by marriage to a family of Metcalfe, the heir male of which assumed, with an honest pride, the surname of his great ancestor. Sir Thomas married, secondly, Alice Middleton, a widow, the "old wife" mentioned by Erasmus, in a passage lately cited, and we are told by others that she was ugly; ill-tempered, and vulgar. By her he had no issue.



Engraved by J. M. W. Turner

ANNE BULLEN

OB. 1536

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HOLBEIN IN THE COLLECTION OF

THE RIGHT HON^{BLE} THE EARL OF WARWICK

London: Published by J. N. 114.9. 15. Hudson & Co. 114.9. 15. Hudson & Co.

QUEEN ANNE BULLEN.

ABSTRACTED from the great events in the origin of which this unhappy fair became accidentally a passive instrument there is little in her story but the facts of her sudden elevation and tragical fall to distinguish it from a common tale of private life, and the faint traces which remain of her conduct leave us little room to suppose that the character of her mind was of a cast less ordinary. Mild, lively, and thoughtless, she seems to have been formed rather to attract than to maintain affection, to inspire gaiety and kindness rather than confidence or respect. The barbarous injustice which she experienced has excited the pity of succeeding ages, and our unwillingness to abandon a tender and amiable sentiment has probably prevented any very strict enquiry into her errors. To add the unfounded imputation of another murder to the long catalogue of Henry's crimes seems a more pardonable mistake than to brand, perhaps unjustly, the memory of a most unfortunate woman, whose punishment, if she were really guilty, had fully expiated her crime.

She was the eldest daughter of Sir Thomas Bullen, afterwards created Viscount Rochford, and Earl of Wiltshire and Ormond, by Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Howard, second Duke of Norfolk of his family. It may be said, if the account of some French writers be correct, that she had been bred in Courts even from her cradle, for at the age of seven years, say they, she was carried to Paris, by Mary, sister to Henry the eighth, when she became Queen of France, remained with her till, upon the demise of the King her husband, the Queen returned to England, was then received into the household of Claude, consort to Francis the first, and, after the death of that Princess, in 1524, lived for some time in the family of Margaret of Valois, Duchess of Alençon

QUEEN ANNE BULLEN

and Berry, sister to Francis, and afterwards better known as Queen to Henry the fourth. Lord Herbert, however, evidently considers her as having attended Mary to France in the character of an efficient domestic, and states, in which he could scarcely have been mistaken, that she returned in 1522. These differences are of small importance. It is certain that not long after her arrival in England she was appointed a Maid of Honour to Catherine of Arragon, and that the King became violently enamoured of her.

A mutual affection at that time subsisted between her and the Lord Percy, eldest son to the Earl of Northumberland, and they had privately plighted their troth to each other. Henry, who had observed their attachment, and dreaded the result, employed Wolsey, to whose grandeur even the heir of the house of Percy administered as a menial attendant, to break their connexion, and the Cardinal called the young Lord into his presence, chid him with extreme bitterness, and, having wrung from him the secret of the proposed match, commanded him with more than the authority of a master, to abandon it. Cavendish, in his life of Wolsey, gives a curious and lengthened detail of their conversation. Percy, having resisted as far as he dared, burst into tears, and promised obedience, which the Earl, his father, was summoned from the north to enforce, and Anne, to disguise the King's motive for this interference, which was then wholly unsuspected, even by herself, was banished from the Court. She was however speedily recalled, and in September, 1532, created Marchioness of Pembroke, Lord Percy was compelled to marry a daughter of the Earl of Shrewsbury, and Anne to become the reluctant partaker in a Throne. she was privately married to Henry, on the twenty-fifth of the succeeding January, by Rowland Lee, Bishop of Lichfield and Coventry, none being present at the ceremony but her father, mother, and brother, her uncle, the Duke of Norfolk, and Cranmer, who had lately been advanced to the Primacy.

QUEEN ANNE BULLEN

Amidst the extravagance of passion which led to this match political considerations were not entirely overlooked. Some months before it was solemnized Henry imparted his resolution, we can scarcely believe in the spirit of mere friendly confidence, to Francis the first, whom he afterwards consulted as to the most proper time and method of publishing it to his subjects. Francis, in his hatred to the family of the ill-fated Catherine, encouraged it with the utmost earnestness, and in the October preceding the marriage received Anne, who then accompanied Henry in one of his magnificent visits to the French coast, with the distinctions due to a Queen. In the mean time Wolsey's utter disgrace had been accomplished. He had incurred the utmost resentment of which Anne was capable, not only by preventing her union to the man whom she loved, but by endeavouring to destroy the preference bestowed on her by another, whom she held at least in indifference. The Cardinal, on the other hand, hated her for her affection to the Protestant persuasion, which she is said to have imbibed from the lessons of Margaret of Valois, a Princess of extraordinary talents, and for the influence over the King which he naturally expected her to exert in favour of the reformation. Doubtless she contributed largely to his fall, and it is the only instance that we find in her conduct of departure from the most inactive feminine softness.

Such had been Henry's impatience that his divorce from Catherine was not fully completed when he married Anne. The definitive sentence was uttered on the twenty-third of May, 1533, when the new Queen was in the fifth month of her pregnancy. She was crowned on the first of June, and in the beginning of September, (for there are disputes, which is singular enough, as to the precise day) produced a daughter, afterwards Queen Elizabeth, immediately after which event the Parliament passed an act, ratifying the divorce, declaring the legality of the King's second marriage, and accordingly settling the Crown, in default of male issue from Anne, on any future wife, on the newly born

QUEEN ANNE BULLEN.

Prineess. It was ordained by the same act that all persons above the age of twenty-one should swear to accept and maintain its provisions, and that such as should refuse that oath were to be deemed guilty of misprision of high treason and whosoever should speak or write against the marriage or succession so established, adjudged traitors. The first sacrifices to this terrific law were those excellent persons, Sir Thomas More, and Bishop Fisher.

One year after the birth of Elizabeth, Anne was delivered of a Prince, who must have died soon after his birth. It may not be improper to observe somewhat particularly on this event. Some writers have informed us that she had a still-born son in January, 1535, and, in their eagerness to add unnecessarily to the measure of Henry's brutality, ascribe to that misfortune his vengeance against her, which, as will be presently seen, burst forth very soon after that period. If they intended to speak of the child whom I have mentioned, they have misrepresented two facts, for it was born in September, 1534, and undoubtedly came into the world alive, if they alluded to another, it will appear that Henry had a son by Anne Bullen who has hitherto never been noticed. In the Harleian collection is one of those letters which it was formerly usual to address, in the name of the Queen Consort, to Peers, Lords Lieutenants, and Sheriffs of Counties, on the birth of an heir to the Crown, and as the subject, historically considered, may not be deemed unworthy of the fullest proof, I will insert the document at length

“ By the Quene ”

“ Right trustie and welbeloved, we grete you well, and whereas it hath pleased Almightye God, of his infinite maiere and grace, to send unto us at this tyme good spede in the delyverance and bringing furthe of a Prince, to the great joye, rejoyce, and inward comfort of my Lorde, us, and all his good and loving subjects of this his realme, for the inestymable benevolence soo shewed unto us we have noo little cause to give high thanks, laude,

QUEEN ANNE BULLEN.

and praising, unto our said maker, like as we doo, mooste lowly, humblie, and wth all the inward desire of oure harte. And, inas-muche as we undoubtedly truste that this oure good spede is to y^r great pleasure, comforte, and consolac[~]on, we therefore by thies oure l^res advertise you thereof, desiring and hartely praying you to give wth us unto Almightye God high thanks, glorie, laude, and praising, and to praye for the good helth, prosp[~]itie, and contynuell preservac[~]on of the said Prince accordingly.

Geven under our Signet, at my Lord's Manor of Grenewiche, the vii day of Septemb. in the xxvth yere of my said Lord's reigne.

To our right trustie and
welbeloved the Lord Cobh[~]m."

Anne's short-lived grandeur subsisted but for three years. Henry had seen Jane Seymour, and determined to possess her. In conceiving his measures for the removal of the sole obstacle to his desires, if such a phrase may be applied to steps so summary that they scarcely seem to have been the result of reflection, he disdained even to invent a reasonable tale, or to mask his inhumanity with artifice. On the first of May, 1536, say our historians, he was present with the Queen at a tournament at Greenwich, in which her brother, the Viscount Rochford, led the challengers, and Henry Norreys, Esquire of the body to the King, and Usher of the Black Rod, the defendants. In the midst of the entertainment the King rose, and departed in sullen silence to Westminster, where he gave instant orders for the apprehension of the Queen, Rochford, and Norreys. To account for this extravagance, it has been idly reported that Anne had suddenly awakened his jealousy by dropping her handkerchief into the lists, which one of the combatants had taken up, and wiped his face with it. So eager was Henry for the execution of his command, that the Queen was arrested on the river by some of the Privy Council, as she returned to London, and her first examina-

QUEEN ANNE BULLEN

with her own perfections, as having lived, in the French Court first, and afterwards in this, with the reputation of a virtuous lady, insomuch that the whisperings of her enemies could not divert the King's good opinion of her, though yet he was in his own nature more jealous than to be satisfied easily. 'I do reject all those, therefore,' says Herbert, 'that would speak against her honour in those times they staid in France. But I shall as little accuse her in this particular of her affairs at this time. It is enough that the law hath condemned her, and that whether she, or any one else, were in fault is not now to be discussed. This is certain. that the King had cast his affection already on Jane Seymour, then attending on the Queen. But whether this alone were enough to procure that tragedy which followed may be doubted in this Prince, for I do not find him bloody but where law, or at least pretext drawn from thence, did countenance his actions' "





Engraving by H. R. 1 m. 1

QUEEN JANE SEYMOUR

OB. 1537

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HOLBEIN IN THE COLLECTION OF

HIS GRACE THE DUKE OF BEDFORD

QUEEN JANE SEYMOUR.

THE history of a young woman suddenly elevated from a private station to a throne from which she was snatched by a premature death when she had graced it for little more than a single year cannot reasonably be expected to contain many circumstances worthy of notice. Wife of one King, and mother of another, we find little else remarkable in the life of Jane Seymour, except that she became the accidental and inactive instrument of raising her family, already of great antiquity, to the highest degree of rank and power that could be conferred on subjects.

She was the eldest of the four daughters of Sir John Seymour, of Wolfe Hall, in Wiltshire, Knight, Groom of the Chamber to Henry the Eighth, and Governor of the Castle of Bristol, by Margaret, daughter of Sir Thomas Wentworth, of Nettlestead, in Suffolk. Her connections and accomplishments procured for her the office of a Maid of Honour to Anne Boleyn, and her beauty made her the innocent cause of her mistress's ruin. Henry conceived a sudden passion for her, and became disgusted with Anne. Equally a stranger to sensibility and to morals, his attachment to her soon became irresistible, and his aversion to the Queen increased to a degree of dislike little short of hatred. He determined to make Jane his wife, and the gratification of his desire was easy to one who was above the ties of law, and to whom those of conscience were unknown. The unhappy Anne was accused of adultery, and put to death, and the unfeeling widower, on the very day, or, according to some, on the third day, after her execution, profaned the altar by pledging his vows to Jane Seymour. This union, according to all our historians, took place in the last week of May, 1536, and on the eighth of the following month the parliament passed an act to settle the Crown on its issue, either male or female, in exclusion of the Princess Mary

QUEEN JANE SEYMOUR

and Elizabeth. The issue of Jane, at least was first named, but, such was the abject submission of that body to Henry's pleasure, that the same act in the conclusion gave him full power to name whomsoever he might think fit for his successor.

About fifteen months after her marriage Queen Jane was delivered of a son, the admirable Edward the sixth. The variance and confusion of historical reports as to the date of the birth of that Prince are very strange. All agree that it happened in 1537; but Hayward fixes it to the seventeenth of October, Sanders to the tenth, and most others, rightly, as we shall see presently, to the twelfth of that month. The following letter from the Harleian Collection, which was doubtless circular, to Sheriffs of Counties, &c would furnish, if it were wanted, an additional authority for the last of these dates, as it may be reasonably presumed to have been written as soon as possible after the birth of the child

By the Quene.

" Trustie and welbeloved, wee grete you well; and, forasmuche as by the inestimable goodnes and grace of Almighty God we be delivered and brought in childebed of a Prince, conceived in most lawfull matrimonie between my Lord the King's Majestic and us, doubtinge not but, for the love and affection which ye beare unto us, and to the commonwealth of this realme, the knowledge thereof should be joyous and glad tydeings unto you, we have thought good to certifie you of the same, to th'intent you might not onely render unto God condigne thanks and praise for soe greate a benefit but alsoe pray for the longe continuance and preservac'on of the same here in this life, to the honour of God, joy and pleasure of my Lord the Kinge and us, and the universall weale, quiett, and tranquillitie of this hole realm

Given under our Signet, att my Lord's Mannor of Hampton Court, the xiith day of October "

To our trustie and welbeloved

George Boothe, Esquier

QUEEN JANE SEYMOUR.

The joy excited by this event was soon abated by the death of the Queen. It has been said that it was found necessary to bring the infant into the world by that terrible method called the Cæsarian operation; and Sir John Hayward, who in composing his life of Edward the Sixth undoubtedly sought the truth with all possible industry, positively states the fact. Other writers, but I know not on what ground, have treated that report as an idle tale, invented by the papists, in malice to Henry. It is true that Sanders, one of the most bitter writers on that side, tells us that the physicians were of opinion that either the mother or the child must perish, that they put the question to the king, which should be spared, the Queen or his son? and that he answered, his son, because he could easily find other wives. The latter part of this reply has certainly very much of the air of a malicious invention, for Henry, amidst all his crimes, was an accomplished gentleman, but whether the anecdote be true or false, it does not clear up the point in question. A very short report to the Privy Council of the birth of the Prince, by her physicians, is extant, in which they state that the Queen had been *happily* delivered, and it has been argued therefrom that the birth could not have been attended by any peculiarly melancholy circumstance, but the word "happily" may perhaps be more properly referred to the production of a living child, a first born son, and then to the Crown, than to the state of the mother. Whatsoever may tend to correctness as to such a fact cannot, historically speaking, be deemed insignificant, I trust therefore to be excused for having been somewhat minute on a disagreeable subject.

The date of the Queen's death, as well as that of the birth of the Prince, has been variously stated. Most of our historians fix it to the fourteenth of October, following probably Lord Herbert, who says that she was delivered on the twelfth, and departed two days after, but the official record in the College of Arms of the ceremonies of her funeral informs us clearly on both points, for the title, or preamble, of it is in these words, "An ordie taken

QUEEN JANE SEYMOUR.

and made for the enterrement of the most high, most excellent, and most Chrysten Pryncess, Jane, Quene of England and of Fraunce, Lady of Ieland, and mother to the most noble and puyssant Prynce Edward, which deecasyd at Hampton Courte, the xxix.th yere of the reigne of our most dread Sovereigne Lord Kyng Henry the eight, her most dearest husband, the xliiii.th day of Octobre, beyng Wedynsday, at nyght, xii of the clock, which departyng was the twelf day after the byrthe of the said Prynce, her Grace beyng in childbed. Whose departyng was as hevy as hath ben hard of many a yere heretofore, for she was a very gracious Lady, havynge the love of all people." This document, which is of great length, informs us that she was buried at Windsor with the utmost pomp. Among much curious information, it discloses two very remarkable facts: that all the various devout services which were performed daily for near a month before the funeral, as well as on the day itself, were strictly after the order of the Romish ritual, and that the lately degraded and disinherited Princess Mary officiated as chief mourner.



SIR NICHOLAS CAREW.

NICHOLAS, a cadet of one of the junior lines of the ancient baronial House of Carru, or Carew, of Devonshire, was settled at Beddington, in Surrey, on considerable property acquired by marriage early in the fourteenth century, and from him the gentleman whose portrait is here presented was fifth in descent. He was the only son of Sir Richard Carew, a Knight Banneret, and Lieutenant of Calais, by Magdalen, daughter of Sir Robert Oxenbridge, of Ford in Sussex, and, at the death of his father, on the twenty-third of May, 1520, inherited from him estates in Surrey, which had gradually increased to so vast an extent that it is still traditionally reported in the neighbourhood of his family mansion that he might have ridden ten miles from it in any direction without quitting his own land. Thus personally powerful, descended from a family already well known to the Crown, which most of his nearest ancestors had served either in the Court or State, and in the prime of manhood and high spirit, he fell as it were naturally into that glittering train which the chivalrous character of the early years of Henry's reign attracted to the person of the Monarch, and presently acquired considerable favour.

He was appointed, about the year 1518, a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber, an office of which the name only now remains in the royal household, but which was then invested with equal trust and dignity, and was soon after employed by Henry in transacting some affairs, probably relating to military matters, at Paris. There, during a residence of several months, the elegant manners and fashions of that court are said to have inspired him with a disgust to the comparative rudeness of his own, which on his return he declared on several occasions with a plainness so offensive to the high nobility, and to the King himself, that

Henry resolved to remove him from his person, and commanded him to repair to Ruysbane, in Picardy, a fortress belonging to the English, of which, to save the appearance of disgrace, he was appointed governor. This umbrage however was transient, for in 1521 he had so completely regained the good graces of his master as to obtain the high distinction of the Garter, and in 1524 was raised to the post of Master of the Horse, and nominated Lieutenant of Calais. A living writer of much respectability has, by a strange anachronism, ascribed these promotions to the influence of Anne Boleyn, who was related to him, through a common ancestor, the Lord Hoo and Hastings; but Anne was then a child, and probably wholly unknown to the King, to whom she was not married till 1532.

He now approached to the station of a favourite — was Henry's constant companion in all the splendid and romantic sports of his court, administered successfully to his pleasures, and was not without some secret share in his counsels. Fifteen years had thus passed in unremitting favour, when in December, 1538, he was suddenly arrested, charged as a party with Henry Courtenay, Marquis of Exeter, and other eminent persons, in a design to depose the King, and to place Cardinal Pole on the Throne, and was beheaded on the third of March, in the following year.

History affords us very little information on the subject of this mysterious plot, and yet less of the part which Carew was alledged to have taken in it, and, in the absence of regular and correct intelligence, invention and conjecture will ever be at work to supply the deficiency. Thus Fuller says, to use his own quaint terms, that "tradition in the family reporteth how King Henry, then at bowls, gave this Knight opprobrious language, betwixt jest and earnest, to which the other returned an answer rather true than discreet, as more consulting therein his own animosity than allegiance. The King, who in this sort would give and not take, being no good fellow in tart repartees, was so highly offended thereat, that Sir Nicholas fell from the top of his favour to the

SIR NICHOLAS CAREW.

bottom of his displeasure, and was bruised to death thereby. This was the true cause of his execution, though in our chronicles all is scored on his complying in a plot with Henry, Marquis of Exeter, and Henry Lord Montague." Lord Herbert, who seems to have told all that could be gathered on the subject, informs us that these two noblemen were found guilty before Thomas Lord Audley, "for the present sitting as High Steward of England," and that, "not long after, Sir Edward Nevile, Sir Geoffery Pole, two priests, and a mariner, were arraigned, and found guilty also, and judgment given accordingly The two lords and Nevile were beheaded, the two priests and mariner hanged and quartered at Tyburn, and Sir Geoffery pardoned" Having thus particularised, even to the meanest, a number of the conspirators who were convicted under some form, at least, of judicial proceeding, the noble writer immediately adds "Sir Nicholas Carew also, Knight of the Garter, and Master of the Horse to the King, for being of council with the said marquis, was beheaded" It should seem then that Carew was brought to no trial Lord Herbert concludes, "The particular offences yet of these great persons are not so fully known to me that I can say much only I find among our records that Thomas Wriothesley, Secretary, then at Brussels, writing of their apprehension to Sir Thomas Wyatt, then his Highness's Ambassador in Spain, said that the accusations were great, and duly proved, and in another place I read that they sent the Cardinal money." Hollingshed tells us that Sir Nicholas, at the time of his death, "made a godly confession both of his fault and superstitious faith" He had been throughout his life a steady professor of the faith of the Romish church, and this, whatever were the offences for which he suffered, doubtless added no small weight to them

Sir Nicholas Carew was buried in the church of St Botolph, Aldgate, in the family vault of the Lords Darcy of the North, to whose House, as we shall see presently, he was allied He married Elizabeth, daughter, and at length heir, of Sir Thomas Bryan,

SIR NICHOLAS CAREW

son and heir of Sir Thomas Bryan, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, and had by her one son, Sir Francis, and four daughters, Elizabeth, wife to a gentleman of the name of Hall, Mary, married to Sir Arthur Darcy, second son of Thomas Lord Darcy of the North, Anne, first to Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, of Paulersperry, in the county of Northampton, secondly to Adrian Stokes, and Isabella, to Nicholas Saunders, son and heir of Sir William Saunders, of Ewell in Surrey, cofferer to Queen Mary. Sir Francis recovered, probably through the favour of Elizabeth, to whom he was personally known, and who graced his fine mansion at Beddington with the fearful honour of more than one visit, a great part of the estates which had been forfeited by the attainder of his father. He died a bachelor, and bequeathed them to his nephew Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, youngest son of his sister Anne, directing him to assume, as he did, the surname and arms of Carew. The descendants of the elder line from that gentleman became extinct in a female, Catherine Carew, who died in 1769, when the estates passed, under a settlement made by the will of her father, Sir Nicholas Hacket Carew, Baronet, first, to the heir male of the Fountaynes, of Melton in Yorkshire, secondly, to that of the family of Gee, of Ottingham, in Kent, each descended by female lines from the subject of this memoir. Both these remainders have now failed, and the estates are possessed by the relict of the late Richard Gee, Esq. whose elder brother assumed the surname of Carew, under the authority of an act of Parliament.



Engraved by S. Freeman

THOMAS CROMWELL, EARL OF ESSEX

OF 1540

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HOLBEIN IN THE COLLECTION OF

SIR THOMAS CONSTABLE BART

THOMAS CROMWELL,

EARL OF ESSEX

HENRY the Eighth in the great work of the Reformation employed men of various characters and powers, and sagaciously assigned to each that share of the task for which he was best qualified. It was allotted therefore to Cromwell to spring the mine which others had secretly dug, and he accomplished it with a brutal vigour and celerity, which seemed to be the effect of zeal, while his heart and mind were wholly unconcerned. Cromwell was more remarkable for courage than prudence; for activity and perseverance than for reflection: nature, habit, and self-interest had combined to render him implicitly obedient; and gratitude, perhaps, for his extraordinary elevation had inspired him with an inflexible fidelity to his master. A soldier of fortune, a citizen of the world; unbiassed by parental example, or domestic affections; by prejudice of education, or solitary enthusiasm. indifferent about modes of religious faith, and ignorant of political systems, he fell into the hands of Henry at the very moment when such a man was peculiarly necessary to the accomplishment of his views, performed the service required of him; and, but for the singularity and importance of that service, would perhaps long since have been nearly forgotten.

He was the son of Walter Cromwell, a blacksmith, and afterwards a brewer, of Putney, in Surrey, and it has been commonly reported that his mother was a Welshwoman of the name of Williams, but Dugdale, in his Baronage, denies this, and very reasonably traces the error to its probable origin. That author conceives that a sister of Cromwell married a Williams, for, as he truly tells us, Cromwell had a nephew of that name, whom he

brought into considerable favour and confidence with the King, and who afterwards assumed the designation of Williams alias Cromwell. This nephew, by the way, at length wholly disused the former surname, founded a respectable family in Huntingdonsire, and became grandfather to the Usurper Oliver, a fact which has been denied by some respectable writers, but of which there is scarcely room to doubt. Thomas, born of such parents, received, as might be reasonably expected, a very narrow education, but he had learned Latin, the New Testament in which language, "gotten by heart," to use the words of Lloyd, "was his masterpiece of scholarship," and thus renders it very probable that it was at first intended to foster him on the monastic bounty of that church, in the destruction of which he afterwards had so large a share. Be this as it might, there can be little doubt that from that, or some other destination, he ran away, to use a familiar phrase, from his family, for we find him suddenly in a foreign country, without friends, money, or views. At length he obtained employment and subsistence as a clerk in an English factory at Antwerp, which he soon quitted, and wandered from thence to Rome, with two Englishmen, who in 1510 were deputed from a religious society at Boston, in Lincolnshire, to solicit the renewal of certain indulgences, or pardons, as they were called, from Pope Julius the Second. He is said to have been highly instrumental to the good fortune of this mission, and Fox, in a long narration, which must rest on the credit of that singular writer, ascribes his success to a ridiculous circumstance. The Pope, according to Fox, took the money which the good Lincolnshire men had brought with them, but the fate of their petition remained long in suspense, till Cromwell, having learned that his Holiness was a great epicure, "furnished him with fine dishes of jelly, after the English fashion, then unknown in Italy," upon which the boon was presently granted. He remained long abroad, variously employed, and served as a soldier, or officer of ordinary rank, under the Duke of Bourbon, and is said to have

EARL OF ESSEX

been present at the sacking of Rome by that prince, but here seems to be an anachronism, for that event occurred in 1527, and it is certain that he had returned to England, and had been retained by Wolsey, two years before that date

During his residence in Italy he had an opportunity of rendering an important service to Sir John Russell, afterwards Earl of Bedford, who at that time resided at Bologna, charged by Henry with some secret mission adverse to the French interest. A plan had been laid to seize the person of that gentleman, and to send him a prisoner to Paris. Cromwell discovered it; and not only apprised him of it, but assisted him in making a precipitate escape. It is highly probable that Russell recommended him to the Cardinal, into whose family he was received immediately after that period, in the character, say all who have written concerning him, of that prelate's solicitor, meaning, I presume, as a steward, or agent for such of his affairs as did not relate to the state. In that capacity he was largely employed in 1525, in superintending the erection and endowment of Wolsey's two colleges at Ipswich and Oxford, and in suppressing the small monasteries, by the revenues of which it was intended to maintain them. He became soon after a member of the House of Commons, and when the articles exhibited against the Cardinal in 1529 were sent down to that House from the Peers, defended him against the charge of treason with equal boldness and acuteness. "From this honest beginning," says Lord Herbert, "Cromwell obtained his first reputation." He soon, however, assumed a different tone. Henry, at the recommendation, as it is said, of Sir John Russell, and Sir Christopher Hales, afterwards Master of the Rolls, took him nearly at that point of time into his service, and we find his lately disgraced patron presently after "importuning him," to use the words of the same noble author, "to induce the King," so great already was his influence, to spare the two colleges, "since," said Wolsey, "they are in a manner *opera manuum tuarum*." Cromwell answered that "the King

THOMAS CROMWELL,

was determined to suppress them, though perhaps he might refund them in his own name, and coldly wished Wolsey to be content ”

It has been said that he gained Henry's grace by disclosing to him the oath taken by the Romish clergy, “ to help, retain, and defend, against all men, the rights of the Holy Sec,” &c and representing to him that it was in fact a virtual dispensation from their oath of allegiance to him. Doubtless Henry already well knew that it was their practice to subscribe to such an obligation, and had considered its effect. But then, adds Fox, who tells us so, “ he declared also to the King how his Majesty might accumulate great riches, nay, as much as all the clergy in his realm were worth, if he pleased to take the occasion now offered,” and we may reasonably suppose that the King, in whose bosom the plan of dissolving the religious houses then secretly rested, must have been highly gratified by such advice from a man to whom he had probably already determined to entrust much of the execution of his scheme, when ripe for disclosure. Cromwell's first employment afforded a most favourable proof of the subserviency and the firmness which Henry had hoped to find in him. He was ordered to endeavour to threaten the clergy, then sitting in convocation, into an acknowledgment of the King's supremacy, and to obtain from them a large sum, as a commutation for their punishment for having supported Wolsey's legantine power, and for having taken the oath lately mentioned. He succeeded in both, and extorted one hundred thousand pounds from the province of Canterbury, and nearly twenty thousand from that of York. This occurred in 1531. His favour now became visible to all. He was knighted in that year, sworn of the Privy Council, and appointed Master of the King's Jewel House, and in the next, Clerk of the Hanaper, a profitable office in the Chancery, and Chancellor of the Exchequer. In 1534 he became Master of the Rolls, and a principal Secretary of State, and was about the same time elected Chancellor of the Univer-

sity of Cambridge, and, in 1535 at length appeared publicly in the great part which he was to perform in the Reformation, with the newly invented title of Visitor-general of all the monasteries throughout England.

Spiritual pride is almost unknown to the Church of England. It may therefore be said without offence that the main object of Cromwell's visitation was the discovery of matters which might render the monastic institutions odious or contemptible, and so to furnish pretexts for their dissolution, and that it was marked by the most frightful instances of cruelty, baseness, and treachery. For these charges we have the authority of very respectable protestant writers. The principals of some religious houses were induced to surrender by threats; those of others by pensions; and, when both those methods failed, the most profligate monks were sought for, and bribed to accuse their governors, and their brethren, of horrible crimes. Agents were employed to violate nuns, and then to accuse them, and, by inference, their respective societies, of incontinence. All who were engaged in this wretched mission took money of the terrified sufferers, as the price of a forbearance which it was not in their power to grant; and Cromwell himself accepted great sums from several monasteries, to save them from that ruin which he alone knew to be inevitably decreed. He executed his commission, however, entirely to Henry's satisfaction, and received the most splendid rewards. On the second of July, 1536, he was appointed Keeper of the Privy Seal; on the ninth of the same month the dignity of a Baron was conferred on him, by the title of Lord Cromwell of Okeham, in the county of Rutland, and on the eighteenth, the Pope's supremacy being now fully abolished, and the King declared Head of the Church, he was constituted Vicar-general and Vicegerent over all the Spirituality, and took his place in the convocation, sitting there above all the prelates, as the immediate representative of the King. This appointment was the signal for the total overthrow of the Roman Catholic establishment.

Cromwell's first act under its authority was the publication of certain articles for the government of the church, by which some of the most important points of the old faith were specifically rejected. Of the seven sacraments three only were retained, those of baptism, penance, and the altar. Preachers were enjoined to teach the people to confine their belief wholly to the Bible, and the three Creeds, and to restrain them from the worship of images, or saints so represented, and the doctrine of purgatory was denied, or, at least, declared to be uncertain and unnecessary. These articles were immediately followed by the prohibition of worship in the Latin tongue, and by the translation of the Holy Scriptures into English, inestimable benefits, for which our gratitude is justly due to Cromwell, as well as for the great temporal advantage of parish registers, which were at the same time ordained to be kept, solely, as it is believed, on his suggestion.

He was now loaded with new rewards. In 1537 Henry appointed him Justice of the Forests north of Trent, and, on the twenty-sixth of August in that year, gave him the Order of the Garter. In 1538 the castle and lordship of Okeham were granted to him, and the office of Constable of Causbrook Castle, and, on the seventeenth of April, 1539, he was advanced to the dignity of Earl of Essex, and to the office of Lord High Chamberlain, having on the tenth of the same month been invested with the lands of the dissolved monasteries of St Oyth's, Barking, Bileigh, St John in Colehester, and other estates in the county of Essex, consisting of thirty manors, and with extensive possessions in those of Norfolk and Suffolk, among which was the large demesne of the Grey Friars of Yarmouth, together with a multitude of manors, lands, and advowsons, in other parts of England, all from the spoil of the discarded church.

Cromwell, however, thus, in the zenith of his greatness, tottered on the brink of ruin. Already hated by the nobility, who viewed him as a base intruder on their order, by the priesthood, whom he had ruined, and by the poor whom he had deprived of the

comforts of monastie hospitality and bounty, he became now an object also of the keenest envy and jealousy. The great house of Vere had been so long graced by the superb office of Lord Chamberlain, which had been successively granted to the Earls of Oxford of that name in succession, even for centuries, that they felt deprived as it were of an inheritance when it was bestowed on him, and the meanness of his origin aggravated their sense of the injury. The family of Bourghier, many branches of which remained, were equally mortified to see the Earldom of Essex diverted from their very ancient blood to that of the son of a smith. The Howards, always powerful, and just then most powerful, and Bishop Gardiner, who as an enemy was in himself an host, and whose favour with Henry was increasing, detested him. To ward off his danger, he endeavoured to conciliate the people: and to that end procured a commission to be erected for the sale, at twenty years' purchase, of such abbey lands as yet remained with the crown. Meanwhile, to divert the attention of Henry from the representations of his enemies, he engaged that Prince in a treaty of marriage with Anne of Cleves, whose Lutheran zeal he hoped successfully to oppose to his Catholic adversaries, and whose gratitude for conducting her to so splendid a throne he expected to secure to himself. The King married her with indifference, and quitted her the next day, with disappointment, and even loathing; but the great weight of his resentment fell on Cromwell, by whom he had been persuaded to wed her.

Henry, from that hour, beheld him with aversion, and agreed, with his usual readiness on such occasions, to sacrifice a man who had no further extraordinary services to render to him. Cromwell was suddenly arrested at the Council Board, by the Duke of Norfolk, on the tenth of January, 1540, and conducted to the Tower, and, on the nineteenth of that month, a bill of attainder against him passed the House of Lords, but was received so coolly by the Commons that they let it remain with them, with little discussion, for ten days, and at length testified their

disapprobation of it by returning it to the Upper House, to which, at the same time they sent another, prepared by themselves, which the Peers eagerly adopted. Amidst the articles of this new bill not one can be found to amount, even by the most forced construction, to treason, still it was a bill of attainder, and Cromwell, who so well knew his master, prepared for the worst. He addressed himself, however, at great length from his prison to Henry, imploring that his life might be spared; and Cranmer seconded his endeavours with remarkable boldness and freedom of terms, by a remonstrance, which Lord Herbert has preserved. Cromwell's letter betrays a miserable abjectness of spirit, and a remarkable poverty of thought and expression; Cranmer's abounds with that kindness and magnanimity which equally adorned his character. "When I have bene accusy'd," writes Cromwell, "to your Magestye of treason, to that I say I never in alle my lyfe thought wyllingly to do that thyng that myght or shold displease your Magestye; and much less to do or say that thyng which of itself is of so high and abhominable offence, as God knowyth, who I doubt not shall reveale the tiewthe to your Highnes. Myne accusers your Grace knowyth God forgive them. For, as I have ever had love to your honor, person, lyfe, prosperite, helthe, welthe, joy, and eomfort, and also your most dere and most entyerly belovyd sone, the Prynce his Grace, and your procedyngs, God so helpe me in this myne adversitie, and confound yf ever I thought the contrary. What labors, paynes, and travailes, I have taken, accordyng to my most bounden dewtye, God also knowyth. for, yf it were in my power, as it is God's, to make your Magestye to live ever young, and prosperous, God knoweth I wolde. If it hadde bene, or were, in my power to make ye so rich as ye myght enriche alle men, God helpe me as I wolde do hit. If it had bene or were in my power to make your Magestye so puyssant as all the world sholde be compellyd to obey yow, Christ he knowyth I wolde, for so am I of all other most bounde, for your Magestye hath bene the most bountifull Prynce to me

that ever was Kyng to his subject ye, and more like a dere father (your Magestye not offended) than a master Such hath bene your most grave and godly counsayle towards me at sundry tymes. In that I have offended I ax yow mercy Should I now for such exceeding goodness, benygnyte, liberalitie, and bounty, be your traytor, nay then the greatest paynes were too little for me. Should any faccyon, or any affeccyon to any point make me a traytor to your Magestye, then all the devylls in hell confound me, and the vengeance of God light upon me, yf I sholde once have thought yt, most gracious Soverayn Lord," &c

While Cromwell thus essayed to move the compassion of Henry by clumsily flattering his ruling appetites, Cranmer, with a noble simplicity, and with an anxiety to serve his friend which almost demands pardon for an impious expression into which it betrayed him, writes thus "Who cannot but be sorrowfull and amazed that he sholde be a traytor against your Majesty? He that was so advanicyed by your Majesty, he who lovyd your Majesty, as I ever thought, no less than God, he who studied always to sett forward whatsoever was your Majestie's will and pleasure, he that caryd for no man's displeasuer to serve your Majesty, he that was suche a servant, in my judgement, in wisdom, diligence, faythefulness, and experyence, as no Prynce in this realme ever had, he that was so vigilant to preserve your Majesty from all treasons that fewe colde be so secretly conceyved but he detected the same in the begynnyng? If the noble Prynces, of happy memorye, Kynge John, Henry III, and Richard II, had had such a counsaylor about them, I suppose they sholde never have byn so trayterously abandoned and overthrowen as those good Prynces were," &c. Henry, however, remained unmoved by these, or any other remonstrances, and Cromwell was beheaded on Tower Hill, on the twenty-eighth of July, 1540.

It has been asserted that this remarkable man also married a person of the name of Williams, but this is very uncertain.

THOMAS CROMWELL

Whomsoever might have been his wife, he left by her an only son, Gregory, who was created Baron Cromwell of Okeham on the same day that his father was advanced to the Earldom of Essex, who married Elizabeth, a sister of Queen Jane Seymour; and in whose posterity the title of Lord Cromwell remained for several generations.



MARGARET TUDOR
QUEEN OF SCOTLAND
OB. 1541

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HENRY III. THE COLT. BY A.C.
THE MOST NOBLE THE MARQUESS OF LOTHIAN

MARGARET TUDOR,

QUEEN OF SCOTLAND

IN all respects but one the character of this lady seems to have borne to that of her brother, Henry the eighth of England, a remarkable similarity. Haughty, magnificent, and luxurious; officiously active in affairs of state, and governing without a system, capricious in her politics, but obstinately impenetrable by persuasion; highly amorous, but totally insensible to the delicacies of the tender passion, and not less versatile in her amours than careless of the public opinion of her inconstancy; like him, she lived neither beloved nor respected, and died wholly unregretted. She was not however cruel. During twenty-eight years of power, sometimes nearly unlimited, sometimes abridged, but always in no small degree existing, not a drop of blood appears to have been shed by her order, or even with her connivance. Like her brother, she possessed an understanding at once solid and lively, with much of that mental refinement, nameless in her time, which has been since distinguished by the appellation of taste. There was a striking likeness too in their countenances. Those to whom the portraits of the youthful Henry are familiar cannot but perceive the resemblance.

It is scarcely necessary to say that she was the eldest daughter of Henry the seventh, by Elizabeth, daughter of Edward the fourth. There is some variance in the accounts of the date of her birth, but the best authorities fix it to the twenty-ninth of November, 1489. Her father, while she was yet in the cradle, meditated to offer her hand to James the fourth of Scotland, and, with the view of detaching that chivalrous prince from a treaty into which he had been tempted by the Duchess of Burgundy,

MARGARET TUDOR,

sister of Edward the fourth, in favour of the pretensions of Perkin Warbeck, proposed the marriage in form when she had scarcely reached her sixth year. James refused, invaded the English border, accompanied by Perkin, and Henry, with the patient and persevering policy which usually marked his measures, contented himself with a steady defence, and, soon after the Scottish King had returned into his own dominions, reiterated the offer. A negotiation of more than three years succeeded, during which the monarchs pledged themselves to an amity for their joint lives, and on the eighth of August, 1503, the marriage was at length celebrated at Edinburgh. Such was then the value of money that the portion of the royal bride was no more than ten thousand pounds, her jointure, in case of widowhood, two thousand annually, and the yearly allowance for her establishment as Queen Consort, only one. The nuptials however were distinguished by the most gorgeous splendour and festivity, of which, as well as of the Princess's journey from London to Edinburgh, a particular and very curious account, in the way of diary, by John Young, Somerset Herald, who attended her, is published in Leland's Collectanea, from the original manuscript remaining in the College of Arms.

For ten years after her marriage the name of Margaret scarcely occurs in history. Between her husband and herself a mutual tenderness seems to have subsisted, which withdrew him from the vague and transient amours in which he had been used to indulge, while it rendered her indifferent to the course of public affairs, and the intrigues of factions. The death of her father, in 1509, was the prelude to important changes in the political relations of the two countries. Henry the eighth however renewed the compact which had been dissolved by the demise of his predecessor, and more than two years passed in profound peace, when a variety of minute causes, some of them merely of a private and domestic nature, produced fresh discords. Ineffectual negotiations succeeded, in which the moderation of Henry, who was not yet a

QUEEN OF SCOTLAND.

tyrant, and the impetuosity of James, were equally conspicuous. A new war at length took place, which terminated in the decisive battle of Flodden, and, on the ninth of September, 1513, rendered Margaret a widow. Her consort, an amiable and popular Prince, who, had his prudence kept pace with his good intentions, would have established a splendid fame, fell in the forty-first year of his age, leaving, of several, only one legitimate child, James, his successor, at that time little more than twelve months old.

The King by his will appointed Margaret, now in the twenty-fourth year of her age, to the Regency, and his nomination was confirmed by a parliamentary council, composed of such of the nobility as had escaped the late terrible encounter, together with the heads of the clergy. This decision, though apparently unanimous, invested her however but with a precarious authority. The influence of France, which had been for more than a century gradually increasing in Scotland, was warmly exerted in favour of John Stuart, Duke of Albany, first cousin to the deceased King, and presumptive heir to the throne, whose whole life had been passed in France, whither his father had been exiled by James the third, his elder brother. A party presently embodied itself to support his interest, and Henry, unaccountably deviating from the character of his nature, as well as from that of his usual policy regarding Scotland, left his sister's authority unaided either by war or negotiation. This forbearance, if we could suspect Henry of the amiable fault of over-pliancy, might be fairly ascribed to her persuasion. She informed him of the measures which were in agitation for placing Albany at the head of the government; declared her indifference to the success of them, and even requested his mediation to promote a good understanding between herself and Albany, and those by whom his pretensions had been forwarded. Her motive, however, presently discovered itself.

Margaret, immediately after her husband's death, or perhaps even before it, had abandoned herself to an indiscreet affection.

QUEEN OF SCOTLAND.

fall the portcullis, and addressed them from within. "This Palace is part of my enfeoffment, and of it by my late husband the King was I made the sole governess, nor to any mortal shall I yield the important command; but I respect the Parliament and nation, and request six days to consider their mandate; for of infinite consequence is my charge, and my counsellors now, alas, are few." While Margaret was giving this proof of a noble and daring spirit, the dastardly Angus gratuitously testified, in due form of law, that he had besought the Queen to surrender her infants, in compliance with the requisition of the Regent and the Parliament.

Margaret now retired with her sons to the castle of Stirling, a fortress of some strength, and on the fifth day demanded of the Regent that they should be left in her custody, offering to maintain them on her dowry. This suit was rejected, and Albany, with a force of seven thousand men, proceeded to besiege the castle. The infant King and his brother were forced from her arms, and placed in the hands of some noblemen devoted to the Regent, while the Queen was re-conducted respectfully, but not without some appearance of captivity, to Edinburgh. Angus, whom the Regent held in the utmost detestation, fled into his own country, and, joining the Lord Home, appeared in arms against Albany, who, on his part, endeavoured to amuse Margaret with insincere negotiation, and, on her disdainful rejection of his overtures, compelled her to write to the Pope and the King of France, declaring her approbation of the measures of his government. A victim thus at once to fraud, to violence, and to her own folly; stripped of her revenues, and suffering even almost the utmost evils of poverty, she managed to concert with Lord Dacre, Warden of the English Marches, the means of escaping into her own country. Henry agreed to receive her, and, however indignant at her marriage, permitted Angus to accompany her. Amidst difficulties and danger, and in hourly expectation of childbirth, she arrived in England on the tenth of October, 1515.

MARGARET TUDOR,

and was in fact delivered eight days after, at Harbottle, in Northumberland, of a daughter, Margaret, who became at length the wife of Matthew Stuart, Earl of Lennox, and progenitrix of a long line of royalty, which yet happily remains.

The Queen, suffering under the usual consequences of this event, and oppressed by acute anxieties, had proceeded no further than Morpeth, on her way to London, when she was seized by a severe illness, which confined her there for many weeks. During that interval the weak and fickle Angus not only privately made his peace with the Regent, but left her, and returned into Scotland, an offence for which she ever after entertained an unalterable and pardonable resentment. She arrived not till the beginning of April, 1516, at her brother's court, where she remained for fourteen months, at the termination of which, Albany, hoping to lessen by a temporary retirement the odium which his despicable and tyrannical government had justly provoked, departed for France, and Margaret, invited by himself and the Parliament, and having on her part engaged to leave his now almost nominal authority undisturbed, arrived in Scotland one week after he had quitted it, was replaced in the possession of her estates, and personal property, and found herself at the head of a considerable party. Albany had fixed five months as the term of his absence, and when they were nearly expired, weary of his regency, and fond of a country in which his character and habits had been formed, he wrote to the Queen, desiring her to assume the government. Margaret, offended and mortified as she had been by her husband, who had now added to former causes of disgust a glaring infidelity to her bed, was sensible however that the aid of such a subject was highly important to the support of the power thus offered to her. She requested the Council of Peers, in whose hands the direction of affairs had been left by Albany, even to recognize him as Regent, and applied to Henry to the same end, but her suit was unsuccessful with each. Angus, however, assisted by her influence, insensibly acquired, during

QUEEN OF SCOTLAND.

three years of alternate tumult or intrigue, all the faculties of that station, when Margaret, by a singular change of policy, if that which was little more than the mere result of various passions may deserve to be so called, solicited Albany to return. A proposal which promised him her aid in the conduct of his government was too tempting to be refused. He arrived in November, 1521; chased her husband from her presence, and compelled him to banish himself to France; and assumed, with her entire concurrence, the supreme rule, and the custody of the young King, her son.

The Regent had scarcely been thus restored, than something more than the tongue of scandal proclaimed an improper intercourse between the Queen and himself. Dacre, in a letter to Henry, even of the following month, says "There is marvellous grete intelligence between the Quene and the Duk, as well all the day as mich of the night; and, in maner, they sett not by who knowe it: and, if I durst say it for fere of displeasure of my Sovereign, they ar over tendre; whereof if your Grace examyne the Bushop of Dunkeld, of his conscience, I trust he will shew the truthe." Henry gave the fullest credit to these reports, and the Queen herself, in one of her many original letters which have been preserved, complains to her brother that Wolsey had called her in the Privy Council "the concubine of Albany." The public opinion of her dishonour was confirmed by her anxiety to obtain a divorce from Angus, which, though she had entertained the design from the hour in which he abandoned her at Morpeth, had not been till now disclosed. In this she was for the present disappointed, chiefly by the opposition of Henry, who, wishing to use him as a counterpoise to the renovated power of Albany, repeatedly demanded of her to receive him again as her husband, in a tone of anger and reproach ill calculated to persuade a woman of her disposition: and now, whether in the hope of bribing her brother to concurrence, or from a mere affection to her native country, she commenced a secret correspondence with him and

MARGARET TUDOR,

his ministers, in which she disclosed from time to time every project formed by Albany with relation to England, and by this useful treachery prevented the most formidable invasion ever meditated by Scotland, and induced the Regent to disband, in the face of a very inferior force, an army of eighty thousand men, with which he was on the point of crossing the border.

The experience even of a few days convinced Albany of the extent of his error. The Scots taxed him with cowardice, the French with treachery, and he formed a sudden resolution again to quit the country, and to weaken the effect of the suggestions of his enemies by carrying to Paris, together with the first news of his unaccountable conduct, the best apology he could frame for it. He embarked on the twenty-fifth of October, 1522, having stipulated, on pain of forfeiture of the Regency, to return before Assumption-day, the fifteenth of August, in the succeeding year. Henry took advantage of his departure to institute various intrigues in Scotland, and addressed himself with success to the love of rule which, in spite of caprice, invariably distinguished his sister. He proposed that the young King should be solemnly placed on the throne, and invested with the exercise of the supreme power, assisted, in fact governed, by the advice of Margaret, and a select Council. An arrangement which involved the interests of many jarring parties necessarily required time, and Albany, who had been apprised of it in an early stage of its progress, arrived shortly after the appointed day, and wholly thwarted it. The Queen, terrified, and watched on all sides, meditated to fly once more to England, but Henry opposed her design. Albany however shewed no disposition to resent her defection, and is said to have treated her even with a polished courtesy, and Margaret, ever versatile, readily coalesced with him. The lapse however of a very few months finally terminated his rule in Scotland. A second disgraceful and bloodless retreat, in November, 1524, with an army which he had raised to invade England, compelled him to quit for ever a country in which he was now utterly disgraced,

QUEEN OF SCOTLAND.

and she instantly joined, without hesitation, her political influence to that of his constant adversary the Earl of Arrian. Jealous of her brother's interference in the affairs of Scotland, she had now the satisfaction of accomplishing without his assistance the plan which he had formed for investing her son with the sovereignty, through the weight which she had derived from the accession of Arrian. Henry seemed indisposed to resent this affront, but secretly prepared to undermine their power, by the aid of Angus, who had at his invitation at length left France, and was awaiting in London some turn of affairs which might favour his return to Scotland.

While these matters were passing Margaret sacrificed her character and her interests, as a woman and a Queen, to a new amour. The object of this folly, who had scarcely reached his twentieth year, was Henry Stuart, second son of Andrew Lord Evandale, and, incredible as it may seem, she presently placed this boy in the offices of Lord Treasurer and Chancellor. Scotland was now in fact without a government, and at this period, the winter of 1524, Angus arrived at Edinburgh, and, with much shew of moderation claimed his marital rights of the Queen, and offered to her his services. It is scarcely necessary to say, that she rejected both. Angus, as his design had been, joined a party of the justly incensed nobility, who chose him their leader, and the Parliament, which was then sitting, appointed him, with six other lords, spiritual and temporal, a Council of Regency, in which the empty title of Principal, with a mere shadow of authority, was allowed to the Queen. The mortified Margaret now retired with Arran, and her minion, to the castle of Stirling, leaving the King in the hands of Angus and his party. She stifled however her resentment for a time, and opened a correspondence with Angus, in the hope of persuading him to consent to a divorce, which she at last obtained. In the mean time James, who soon became weary of a sort of captivity to which he was now subjected, pressed her by secret messengers to devise means for his release.

MARGARET TUDOR,

Two of those irregular military enterprises then so frequent in Scotland were instituted by her direction with that view, and not without some hope of recovering her own authority, but both were fruitless. Her love of rule, and disposition to political intrigue, were now for a while suspended by the long solicited sentence of divorce, and in March, 1525, she became the wife of Henry Stuart, and in a great measure sacrificed to an unpardonable weakness the slender remains of her public consequence.

Margaret's importance had indeed now merged into that of her son. James was in his fifteenth year, naturally manly for his age, and distinguished for that precocity of spirit which the consciousness of high birth seldom fails to excite in the healthy and robust. He loved his mother, and longed to maintain to the utmost the splendor of her rank, and to salve the wounds that she herself had inflicted on her good name, while she, in addition to the usual partiality of a mother, in which she seems to have been by no means wanting, was naturally anxious to aid that authority which strove to exert itself on her behalf. Margaret had always been popular in Scotland, and Angus found it prudent to relax the severity with which he had interdicted all intercourse between them. The Queen was admitted to visit her son for long intervals, and acquired over him a considerable influence, which she exerted to the prejudice of Angus. James, pressed perhaps as well by a sense of duty as by her instances, determined to escape from the thralldom in which he was held by that nobleman, and having contrived to fly in disguise from his palace of Falkland, and from the stern custody of Sir George Douglas, the brother of Angus, reached Stirling in safety, where he found the nobility of his mother's party prepared to receive him. Fully possessed at length of the legal authority, he overthrew the whole fabric of government lately erected by Angus and his friends, whom he proscribed, and restored his mother to the dignity of her proper station, and to the enjoyment of her revenues, without unduly surrendering to her the direction of the affairs of the state.

QUEEN OF SCOTLAND

Thus unwillingly disencumbered of the cares of sovereignty, the restless spirit of Margaret wasted itself on real or imaginary domestic grievances. She became weary of her third husband, now decorated by James with the title of Lord Methven, accused him of squandering her revenues, and actually instituted a process of divorce from him, which her son, in compassion to her character, interposed his authority to suppress. Meanwhile, from the mere thirst of employment, she condescended for a time to become a spy for her brother Henry, whose advice and interests in her intervals of power she had always slighted, and perplexed his measures with useless intelligence. The King, her son, had married, and become a widower, and had taken a second wife. His private affections, and his political interests, had been thus diverted into new channels, and Margaret's views of influence had become mere visions. She retired unwillingly, and became forgotten by all but the little circle of her court, and, dying at Methven, in June, 1541, was buried in the church of the Carthusians at Perth.

A vast treasure of the most secret original correspondence of this remarkable woman fell into the hands of Sir Robert Cotton and is extant in our great public repository, the British Museum. From that source, chiefly through the medium of a modern historian of Scotland, whose indefatigable labours cannot be too highly prized, this very superficial sketch of her story has been derived. To those who may be desirous to gain a more clear and direct view of the power and weakness of her mind, of the elegance of her accomplishments, and the meanness of her follies; I beg leave to recommend that inspection of the originals which I have not neglected. The character of Margaret Tudor will be found to stand almost alone among the curious anomalies of history.



Engraved by F. H. Motte

CHARLES BRANDON, DUKE OF SUFFOLK

OB 1535

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLECTION OF

HIS GRACE THE DUKE OF BEDFORD

CHARLES BRANDON,

DUKE OF SUFFOLK

THIS fortunate and gallant man was the son of William, or, as he is generally styled, Sir William Brandon, (though it is doubtful whether he was a knight) by Elizabeth, daughter and coheir of Sir Henry Bruyn, and widow of a gentleman of the name of Malloy. It may be said that he had an hereditary claim on the friendship and gratitude of Henry the Eighth, for his father had appeared among the first asserters of the late King's title to the throne; had forfeited an ample patrimony, and joined that prince in his exile in Brittany, returned with him to England, and fell in Bosworth field, where he bore the standard of the House of Lancaster, in the very hour which seemed to promise him the brightest fortunes. He was slain by the hand of royal Richard himself.

Charles became in every sense a ward of the Crown, was bred in the Court, and chosen by the King as one of the more familiar attendants on the person of his heir. He must have been at least five years older than the Prince, for his father died in 1486, and the young Henry was not born till 1491. It is probable then that he became rather the director than the companion, as he has generally been called, of his master's amusements and that the observation too which somewhat riper years perhaps enabled him, even at that time, to make on Henry's disposition might have laid the foundation of that uninterrupted security in which for so many years he alone enjoyed constantly the Royal favour. With a sufficient understanding for higher spheres of action, he seems, and indeed in such a reign it was a proof of his sagacity, to have adopted by choice the character of a mere courtier, but he moved in it with a rare dignity, and envy, malice, and duplicity, seem to have been unknown to him. "The gallants of the Court," says

CHARLES BRANDON,

Lord Heibert, in his history of the year 1513, " finding now the King's favour shining manifestly on Wolsey, applied themselves much to him, and especially Charles Brandon, who, for his goodly person, courage, and conformity of disposition, was noted to be most acceptable to the King in all his exercises and pastimes " This is the sole record against him of any thing like subservience or flattery.

Henry, on mounting the throne, appointed him one of the Esquires of the Body, and Chamberlain of the Principality of Wales In 1513 he first appeared in warlike service, was present in that desperate action with a French squadron which occurred early in the spring of that year off Brest, and on his return was created a Peer, by the title of Viscount L'Isle That dignity was conferred on him on the fifteenth of May, and on the last day of June he embarked with Henry on that invasion of France which was distinguished by the successful siege of Therouenne, and by the action vulgarly called the Battle of Spurs, in a supposed allusion to the swiftness with which the French fled from the field, but which in fact obtained its name from the village of Spours, near which it was fought He commanded the vanguard of the English army in that service, after which he marched with the King into Flanders, where, having reduced Tournay, they were met at Lisle, and splendidly entertained by the Emperor Maximilian. Here he is said not only to have made some impression on the heart of that monarch's daughter the Archduchess Margaret, but even to have aspired to her hand " I find," says Herbert again, " some overture of a match between Charles Brandon, now Lord Lisle, and the Princess Margaret, which, though it took no effect, was not yet without much demonstration of outward grace and favour on her part " He was destined however to obtain a consort yet more illustrious The Princess Mary, second sister to Henry, had been married in the autumn of 1514 to Louis the Twelfth of France, a political union of youth and beauty to debilitated old age Brandon, now Duke of

DUKE OF SUFFOLK.

Suffolk, having been so created on the first of the preceding February, was sent, with the flower of the English nobility, to grace the nuptials : and it has been said, that his skill and courage in the justs which formed a part of the celebration, and which chanced to be contended with more than usual fierceness, captivated the affections of the Queen. It is more reasonable however to suppose, nor is the conjecture altogether unsupported by historical evidence, that she had flattered his hopes long before she quitted England. Be the fact as it may, the good Louis died within three months after his marriage, and his youthful Dowager, within very few days after, was secretly married to the Duke of Suffolk, which ceremony was publickly repeated soon after at Calais, and, finally, at Greenwich, on the thirteenth of May, 1515.

It is difficult to reconcile Henry's conduct to his character with regard to this affair. He made at first a slight shew of resentment, but was presently appeased, and the return of his favour was accompanied by a grant to the Duke of the great estates which had formerly belonged to Edmund de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk. Is it possible that friendship and love could have extorted this tribute from haughtiness and tyranny, or was it the result of mere policy, cold in its motives, and accidentally just in its consequence? We can perhaps have no better clue to the solution of the question than in Lord Herbert's account of this, the most important circumstance of the Duke's life, which take in the words of the historian, who, in speaking of the treaty of peace then pending with France, for which Suffolk was the first plenipotentiary, concludes thus "Together with the proposing of this treaty, our King sent a letter to the Queen, his sister, wherein he desired to know how she stood affected to her return to England, desiring her withal not to match without his consent. She, on the other side, who had privately engaged her affection to Charles, Duke of Suffolk, made no great difficulty to discover herself to both Kings," (meaning Francis the First, who had succeeded her late husband, and her brother Henry) "intreating

CHARLES BRANDON,

Francis to mediate this marriage, and our King to approve it. Unto the former Francis easily agreed, though once intending to propose a match between her and the Duke of Savoy, but our King, for the conservation of his dignity, held a little off: however, he had long since designed her to Suffolk. The Queen also, believing that this formality was the greatest impediment, did not proceed without some scruple, though protesting, as appears by an original, that if the King would have her married in any place save where her mind was, she would shut herself up in some religious house. Thus, without any great pomp, being secretly married, the Queen writ letters of excuse to the King her brother, taking the fault, if any were, on herself. and together for the more clearing the Duke of Suffolk, professed that she prefixed the space of four days to him, in which, she said, unless he could obtain her good will, he should be out of all hope of enjoying her whereby, as also through the good office of Francis, who, fearing that our King by her means should contract some greater alliance, did further this marriage, our King did by degrees restore them to his favour, Wolsey also not a little contributing thereto, while he told our King how much better bestowed she was on him than on some person of quality in France." Suffolk, in addition to the probable advantages of this affinity to the throne, derived immense wealth from his marriage to Mary. Her jointure was sixty thousand crowns annually, and the personal property which she was allowed to bring to England was estimated at two hundred thousand, together with a celebrated diamond, of immense price, called, "le Mignon de Naples."

In 1515, on some occasion of disgust between him and Wolsey, he retired for a considerable time into the country: but Henry loved him too well to sacrifice him to the favourite, and the duke, on his part, had too much nobleness of spirit to oppose Wolsey by any other means than those of an honest and open resentment, which seems ever after to have subsisted. He returned to the Court with unimpaired favour was among the first of Henry's

DUKE OF SUFFOLK.

gallant companions in the romantic festivities of 1520, which distinguished the King's famous interview with Francis the First in Picardy . and in 1523 invaded France at the head of twelve thousand men The circumstances of that expedition afford a curious proof of the imperfection of the military œconomy of those days, even in the two greatest military powers of Europe : for, while the utmost efforts of the French were insufficient to prevent that small force, aided by eight thousand Germans, from penetrating within eleven leagues of Paris, Suffolk, on the other hand, having gained that mighty advantage, found himself obliged to retrace his steps precipitately to Calais, to save his men from dying of hunger Henry was highly displeased at this retreat, and the Duke wisely deferred his voyage to England till he had appeased his master's choler.

In the eventful period which shortly followed he became unavoidably an actor in the great scenes which distinguished it. He was a witness in 1529 in the enquiry on which the King grounded his claim of divorce from Catherine, subscribed to the articles preferred by the Parliament against Wolsey ; and also to the declaration addressed by the Peers in the same Parliament to Pope Clement the Seventh, by which they threatened to abolish the supremacy of the Holy See in England, should the Pontiff deny his consent to the dissolution of the marriage. He fell indeed into all the measures which led to the reformation, with a readiness which, if it were not the result of insincerity, might perhaps, at best, be ascribed to an indifference as to all modes of religious faith , and Henry afterwards rewarded his compliance by grants of abbey lands to a vast amount In 1536 he commanded the troops which were then hastily raised to march against the insurgents of Lincolnshire and Yorkshire , and in 1541 once more attended Henry to France, and was appointed General of the army sent to besiege Boulogne, which he reduced after a siege of six weeks His health was probably at that time declining, for he made his will immediately before his departure,

CHARLES BRANDON,

and died on the fourteenth of August, in the following year. By that instrument, which is dated the twentieth of June, 1544, he orders that a cup of gold should be made of his collar of the Garter, and given to the King; that the ceremonies of his funeral should be conducted with a frugality and plainness very unusual at that time, to use his own words, "without any pomp or outward pride of the world," and that his body should be buried in the collegiate church of Tatteshall, in Lincolnshire. He was interred, however, with great magnificence, by the special command of the King, and at his charge, in St. George's Chapel at Windsor.

The Duke, at the time of his death, held the posts of Chief Justice in Eyre of all the King's Forests, and Great Master (or, as we now say, Lord Steward) of the Royal Household, and these appear to have been the only public appointments of note that were at any time conferred on him. He had been four times married. First, to Margaret, daughter of John Neville, Marquis Montacute, and widow of Sir John Mortimer, from whom he was divorced, apparently at her suit, because he had, previously to their nuptials, privately signed a contract of marriage with Anne, daughter of Sir Anthony Browne, Lieutenant of Calais. He took that Lady to his second wife, and had by her two daughters; Anne, born before marriage, who became the wife of Edward, Lord Powis, and Mary, who married Thomas, Lord Monteagle. The Queen Dowager of France brought him a son, Henry, who was created Earl of Lincoln, and died young; and two daughters, Eleanor, wife of Henry Clifford, Earl of Cumberland, and Frances, married, first to Henry Grey, Duke of Suffolk, and then to Adrian Stokes. By his fourth Lady, Catherine, daughter and heir of William Lord Willoughby of Eresby, he had two sons, Henry, and Charles, who survived him only for the space of six years, for they died of the sweating sickness, at the Bishop of Lincoln's palace at Bugden, on the same day, the fourteenth of July, 1551.

The original of the following short letter from the Duke, and

DUKE OF SUFFOLK

his last Duchess, to Lord Cobham, then Governor of Calais, is in the Harleian collection I insert it merely as a specimen of the familiar epistolary style of him who was esteemed the most polite nobleman of his time

“ After my right hartie commendac^ons to yo^r good Lordshipp, w^t like thanks aswell for y^r gentell li^e dyrected to me from Callays of the xviith of this instant, as also for yo^r qwailes, which this p^{re}sent mornyng I have receyved by yo^r servant And where you desier to knowe in what p^{ar}t in Kent I shall remayn, to th^e entent you wold from tyme to tyme signifye to me of such newes as be currant ther, for yo^r s^oo doing I geve unto you most harty thanks. For aunswere wherunto you shall understand that, as far as I knowe yet, I shall demure in this town · but, whersoever I shall be, you shall have knowlege therof from tyme to tyme. I fynde myself moch beholding to my Lady, yo^r bedfellow, who hath sent me venison, and made me good chere

“ Also, as tuching Lightmaker, for a complaynt that he shuld make By my trowth, my Lord, beleve me he nev^{er} complayned to me of any suche matt^r, but indede he tolde me that the displeashur that was was for that another of his countrey wold have taken away his men; and, as long as he shall behave hymself honestly, I hartley desier you to beare and owe unto hym yo^r good wyll and favor, for my sake; and, yf he doo otherwyse, then to be unto hym no woorse thenne you wold be to another Thus fare yo^r Lordshipp right hartely well. From Rochester, the xixth of June

Yo^r Lordshipp's assured freend,

CHARLYS SUFFOLKE ”

“ MY LORD,

Wth my harté thanks for yo^r gentle remembrians, I lekewys mayk to you my harté comendesens

Yo^r pouer fiend,

KATHERINE SUFFOLK ”



Engraved by Tho Wright

CARDINAL BEATOUN

OB 1516

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLECTION AT

HOLYROOD PALACE EDINBURGH

CARDINAL BEATOUN.

DAVID BEATOUN, for his talents, for the loftiness of his spirit, for his complete monopoly of royal favour, and his unbounded power in the government both of Church and State, may be not unaptly called the Wolsey of Scotland, but he was not, like that great man, the child of obscurity, nor the builder, from the foundation, of his own fortunes. His family was even illustrious, for he was descended from the old French house of Bethune, connected by more than one marriage with the ancient Earls of Flanders, and celebrated for having produced, among other branches dignified with the same rank, that of the ever-memorable Maximilian, Duke of Sully. The credit of his name had been raised in Scotland, where his peculiar line had existed for more than two centuries in the character of respectable country gentlemen, by his uncle James Beatoun, Archbishop of St. Andrews, and Lord Chancellor, a statesman of great parts and power, and he was the son of John Beatoun, of Balfour, elder brother to that Prelate, by Isabel, daughter of David Moneypenny, of Pitmilley, in the county of Fife. He was born in 1494, and received an admirable education at home, and in the university of St. Andrews, under the eye of his uncle, who sent him, when approaching manhood, to France, with the double view of completely qualifying him in the university of Paris for the ecclesiastical profession, and of introducing him advantageously to the Duke of Albany, who resided in that country, and who was then about to accept the office of Regent of Scotland during the minority of his great nephew, James the fifth. Both objects were attained. David gained the highest credit by the success of his studies, and the Duke employed him, even while he was prosecuting them, in

CARDINAL BEATOUN.

several affairs at the Court of France in which the public interests of Scotland were involved, and, upon the death in 1519 of the Scottish resident minister in Paris, appointed him to that office. His uncle in the mean time laboured with the most affectionate zeal to advance him at home, and, on being translated in 1523 from the Archbishopric of Glasgow to the Primacy, resigned the rich and mitred abbey of Aberbrothock, prevailed on the Regent to give it to his nephew, and on the Pope to grant him for two years a dispensation, waving the forms of acceptance required by the Church, in order that he might perform without interruption his diplomatic duties at Paris

He returned, and took his seat in the Parliament, in 1525. During his mission important changes had occurred in the government. the Regent had been displaced, and the Pimate deprived of the office of Chancellor, and driven into retirement by the party headed by the Earl of Angus, husband of the Queen Mother, but Beatoun's prospects seem to have been in no degree eluded by those circumstances, for he had not been many weeks in Scotland when he was appointed by the Parliament one of the six members from that body to whom the charge of the King's person and education was specially committed. Younger, more polite, and perhaps more artful, than his colleagues, it is not strange that the youthful James should have selected him from them for his companion and confidant. As the mind of the King advanced to maturity, to these lighter impressions was added the weight of Beatoun's splendid and commanding abilities, and motives of policy soon after intervened on either side to consummate the ascendancy which he at length gained. In the mean time Angus, who had governed not only the realm but the King with a controul too sharp and haughty to be lasting, was overthrown by one of those sudden turns at that time so frequent in his country; the Pimate returned, not to resume his former power in the State, but to endeavour to obtain it for his nephew, whom he now named as his coadjutor, and whom the King presently after placed

CARDINAL BEATOUN

in the office of Lord Privy Seal. That appointment, which under the Scottish monarchy actually invested him who held it with all the confidence which its denomination implies, was conferred on Beatoun in 1528, and from that period he was considered to be, as in fact he was, the King's chief minister and favourite.

Scotland was then divided into two powerful and furious factions; the French, which included nearly all the clergy, and consequently a great majority of those of the common people who were not subject to the bond of clanship, and the English, consisting of a formidable number of the nobility, some of whom were actuated by personal enmity to individuals of the Court or Council, others by an habitual jealousy of foreigners, and not a few by the bribes of Henry the eighth. The young King and Beatoun became mutually attached to the former party; the one, from his sincere devotion to the ancient faith, and the horror with which he regarded the efforts directed against it by his uncle King Henry; to which seems to have been added an earnest desire to marry a Princess of France, the other, because he had entered into secret engagements with Francis the first, to secure to him a lasting alliance with Scotland, and had received from that Prince in return the most solemn assurances of friendship and favour. With these predispositions both in master and servant, James in 1533 dispatched him to Paris, professedly to demand in marriage the Princess Magdalen, sister to the King, but he was privately charged with business of higher importance, and seems in this mission to have negotiated and concluded a secret treaty with Francis, and in some measure with the Emperor, and the Pope, for the protection of the Catholic religion, and necessarily therefore in opposition to all the views then entertained by our Henry. He returned fully successful in all that he had undertaken, but the marriage was postponed in consequence of the ill state of health of the Princess at that time, nor was it celebrated till 1536, when James, attended by Beatoun, made a long visit to the Court of France, and wedded her in person.

CARDINAL BEATOUN.

The young Queen died within two months after her arrival in Scotland, and the King, anxious to avoid reiterated offers from Henry and the Emperor of the hand of the Princess Mary of England, sent Beatoun again to the French Court, with proposals to Mary of Lorraine, daughter to the Duke of Guise. During this negotiation, which seems to have occupied some considerable time, he received at length publicly the strongest marks of Francis's partiality. In November 1537 that Prince signed an ordinance permitting him to hold benefices, and purchase estates, in France, and presently after bestowed on him the rich Bishopric of Mirepoix, in Upper Languedoc. He returned in the following July, bringing with him the new Queen. His uncle, the Archbishop, who had become infirm, timid, and indolent, had for some years privately delegated to him almost the whole authority of the Primacy, but the natural mildness of that Prelate sometimes interposed to moderate the zeal of the Coadjutor: the reigning Pope, Paul the third, on the other hand, determined to encourage it. Hoping yet to retain to the Holy See the allegiance of Scotland, and anxious therefore to place without delay at the head of her Church a man at once wise, resolute, and active, as well as sincerely devoted to the Papacy, he selected Beatoun for that service. Willing however to leave to so ancient and faithful a son as the Primate at least the name of his dignity, the Pontiff devised the means of giving him a superior without depriving him of his See, by raising his nephew to the dignity of a Cardinal. He was elected to the Purple on the twentieth of December, 1538, and within a few months after succeeded, on the death of his uncle, to the Archbishopric of St. Andrews.

He now pressed for a special legantine commission, but the Pope answered that the Primacy annexed to his See constituted him what in the language of the Church was termed "Legatus natus," and invested him with sufficient ecclesiastical authority in Scotland. James, who had at first seconded with earnestness his suit for that distinction, seems to have desisted at the instance

CARDINAL BEATOUN.

of Henry That Prince, who now considered Beatoun as a formidable adversary, had lately dispatched to Scotland Sir Ralph Sadleir, a minister not less remarkable for fidelity than acuteness, for the sole purpose of effecting his ruin, and James, though he refused, with a laudable firmness, to listen to insinuations against a favourite servant which were not only malicious but ungrounded, perhaps yet deemed it prudent to concede in this single instance to the angry feelings of his uncle. A most exact and curious recital of Sadleir's conversations with James on the subjects of his mission, highly creditable as well to the heart as to the understanding of the Scottish Prince, may be found in a letter of great length from the Ambassador to his master, in the publication of "Sadleir's State Papers"

The conduct of Beatoun under this disappointment amply proved that his attachment to the Romish Church, and to its head, was not to be shaken by any selfish considerations. He determined to prove the degree of that power which the Pope had decided to be sufficient, and in the spring of 1540 went to St. Andrews with a pomp and splendor which had never before been used by any Primate of Scotland, attended by a numerous train of the first nobility and gentry, by the Archbishop of Glasgow, Lord Chancellor, many other Prelates, and nearly the whole body of the clergy. Having arrived there, he convened them in a sort of general ecclesiastical council, under his presidency, in the cathedral, represented to them the imminent perils which threatened the Church, and laid before them the measures which he had devised for its defence. His suggestions were received with unanimous approbation, and processes were not only instituted, even in their first sitting, against several of the reformers, but a sentence of confiscation and the stake was passed on a Sir John Boithwick, one of the most distinguished among them, who, on having been previously cited to appear before this assembly, had fled into England, where he was gladly received by Henry, and soon after employed by that Prince in a mission on the affairs of the reformation to the

CARDINAL. BEATOUN.

Protestant Courts of Germany. Borthwick was burned in effigy, his goods seized, and all intercourse with him prohibited under pain of excommunication. The Cardinal, thus encouraged, proceeded with vigour against the enemies of his Church, and, naturally enough, incurred from them the denomination and odium of a persecutor, which those who may take the trouble to disentangle the truth from the jarring and obscure historical accounts of that time, will find to have been very unjustly cast on him. The most romantic tales have been told of his furious severity. The celebrated Buchanan, who had been charged with heresy, and confined, and who, as a grave writer ridiculously observes, "would certainly have been put to death, had he not escaped out of prison," tells us that Beatoun had presented to the King a roll of three hundred and sixty of the principal nobility and gentry of Scotland as proper objects of prosecution, and in another part of his history cites a circumstance which will be presently mentioned, to shew the enormous cruelty of his natural disposition. Neither of these reports are in any degree supported by any other writer of that time; but the best apology for Beatoun's memory with respect to such charges is in the historical fact that only four or five persons suffered death on the score of religious difference during his long government of the Church of Scotland.

Certain too it is that as his influence over the mind of the King, his master, was unbounded, so was his choice of means by which to stem the torrent of the reformation wholly uncontrouled. In all political as well as religious affairs James obeyed him with the subserviency of a pupil. When Henry the eighth proposed a conference with that Prince, early in his reign, at York, James, anxious to maintain peace with his uncle, and curious to behold the splendid novelties of the English Court, eagerly accepted the invitation. The time for the meeting was fixed, and all arrangements made for his journey, when Beatoun suddenly interposed his authority, and compelled the King, to the great offence of

CARDINAL. BEATOUN.

Henry, to break the appointment, and prepare for war. With yet more facility he induced his master to that invasion of England in 1542, which ended in the terrible overthrow of the Scots on Solway Moss. James, who survived that great misfortune but for a few weeks, is said by most historians to have died of a broken heart, occasioned by his bitter reflections on it, while a few obscure writers have insinuated that the Cardinal destroyed him by poison, a slander invented in the blindness of malice, and utterly rejected by the sobriety of common sense. His influence over James subsisted to the last hour of that Prince's life. Beatoun persuaded him, a few hours before his dissolution, to sign a will, nominating himself, and the Earls of Argyll, Huntly, and Arran, a Council of Regency, to govern the Kingdom in the name of the infant Mary. The validity of this instrument, which had been solemnly proclaimed in Edinburgh, was presently questioned by the English faction, and soon after annulled, on the coarse and ready pretence that it had been forged by the Cardinal. No steps were taken to prove this charge, and indeed it seems to have been a mere invention, to apologise for depriving him of that power which was now to fall for a time into the hands of his enemies. He was stripped accordingly of all authority in the government, and in a manner banished to his diocese, and James Hamilton, Earl of Arran, who was presumptive heir to the Crown, was, in the spring of 1543, chosen by the Parliament sole Regent.

The first step made by the party which had thus gained the ascendancy was to entertain a proposal made by Henry for the marriage of his son, Edward, to Mary, then in her cradle. To this of all public measures, it was known that Beatoun would be most averse. It was determined therefore, before it came to be discussed in Parliament, to prevent his attendance in that assembly, and he was suddenly seized, and imprisoned in the castle of Blackness. His conduct now unveiled the seemingly magical power which he had so long exercised, the simple result of transcendent faculties of mind, and of a courageous heart. This superiority the

CARDINAL BEATOUN.

ensured to him, in an age comparatively artless, the attachment of many of the first men in Scotland, who bowed instinctively to his mighty talents, and were now ready to obey his mandates, though issued through the grates of a prison. To these natural means was added the weight of his ecclesiastical influence. Airan, a weak and irresolute man, terrified at the boldness of the measure which he had been made the instrument of executing, was easily prevailed on to connive at the Cardinal's removal to St Andrews by the Lord Seaton, to whose custody he had been committed, and whom he had gained to his interest. There, still in some measure in the character of a prisoner, he summoned a meeting of the clergy, vehemently excited their opposition to the English marriage, as the only means of preserving the Church, and, with little difficulty, engaged them to raise money for the equipment of troops, should force become necessary for the attainment of their object. Meanwhile he concerted measures with the Earls of Huntly, Argyll, Bothwell, and Murray, for gaining possession of the persons of the young Queen, and the Queen Dowager, who were accordingly carried off by those noblemen from Linlithgow to Stirling, and for preventing the meeting of the Parliament, in which they failed. It was convened on the 25th of August, 1543, and ratified under the great seal the treaties with England for a peace, and for the marriage, in concert with the Regent, who set out on the following day to St Andrews, where he proclaimed the Cardinal a rebel, and in the same week met him privately, received absolution at his hands, and surrendered himself implicitly to his direction.

Beatoun, for the short remainder of his life, swayed the will of the Regent with a power even more unlimited than that to which the late King had submitted. Very soon after their reconciliation, Gawen Dunbar, Archbishop of Glasgow, who had held the office of Chancellor for seventeen years with the highest reputation, was compelled to relinquish it to the Cardinal, who resigned that of the Privy Seal, in favour of John Hamilton, Abbot of Paisley, to

CARDINAL BEATOUN

whose influence over Arran, his natural brother, he had been much indebted in the late singular political revolution. A single step remained at once to fulfil the dearest wish of his heart, and to crown the triumph of his ambition. He demanded of the Regent to solicit for him at the Court of Rome the appointment of Legate à latere. The request was made, and seems to have been granted, without hesitation, and he was raised to that superb ecclesiastical station on the thirtieth of January, 1543, O S by the same Pope who had formerly denied it to him. He commenced without delay the exercise of the extensive faculties with which it had invested him, held a solemn visitation to his own diocese, attended by the Regent, and others of the highest public functions in the realm, to enquire into the state of religious opinions and practices, endeavoured to reclaim the moderate reformers by arguments and threats, and proceeded with severity against a few self-devoted zealots whose furious demeanour had left him no choice but to abandon them or his Church to inevitable destruction. At Perth five persons, of the lowest order, were put to death, not for espousing the doctrines of the reformation, but for having insulted by the grossest indecencies the established worship of the land. On his return, he convened an assembly of the Clergy at Edinburgh, which he opened with a speech of distinguished impartiality. Christianity, he said, laboured under the greatest peril, for which he knew but two remedies, each of which he had resolved to administer, the one, a vigorous prosecution of those who professed or encouraged the new modes of faith, the other, a reformation of the scandalous and immoral lives of the catholic clergy, which had furnished an ample pretext for separation.

Had he proceeded no further he might have escaped the censure of persecution from the many protestant writers, for we have no account of him from the pens of those of his own Church, who have given that colour to his character, but he now determined to attack the leader of the Scottish reformers, and it was

for his prosecution of George Wishart that they consigned his name to the most lasting odium. Wishart was a person of considerable talents and learning, a persuasive and indefatigable preacher, and a man of the most exemplary morals. His conduct exhibited, together with the most overheated zeal, a mildness and patience of temper, and an innocency of manners and conversation that not only recommended, but endeared, him to all with whom he could obtain intercourse. The Church of Rome could not have had a more formidable enemy, nor could there perhaps have been found among its opponents any other man so certain of deriving from extremity of punishment the title of martyr. Beatoun, who had long beheld his progress with increasing uneasiness, at length prevailed with the Regent to issue an order for his apprehension, and is said to have accompanied the Earl of Bothwell into East Lothian, of which county that nobleman was hereditary sheriff, to ensure its success. Wishart was conducted to the Castle of Edinburgh, from whence, at the request of the Queen dowager, who always adhered to the Cardinal, the Regent directed that he should be transferred to St Andrews, where Beatoun immediately prepared for his trial, and summoned the Prelates of the realm to assemble there for that purpose on the twenty-seventh of February, 1545, O. S. It was suggested at their first meeting, to lessen the responsibility of the clergy, that application should be made to the Regent to grant a special commission constituting some eminent layman to preside, to which the Cardinal agreed. Allan was at first willing to concede this point, but, on the advice of a zealous protestant, to which persuasion indeed he was himself inclined, he returned, to use the words of Spotswood, this answer, "That the Cardinal would do well not to precipitate the man's trial, but to delay it until his coming, for, as to himself, he would not consent to his death before the cause were well examined, and if the Cardinal should do otherwise, he would make protestation that the man's blood should be required at his hands." Beatoun, enraged at this perhaps

CARDINAL BEATOUN.

first instance of the Regent's resistance to any dictate of his, rejoined, adds Spotswood, " that he wrote not unto the Governor as though he depended in any matter upon his authority, but out of a desire he had that the heretic's condemnation might proceed with a shew of public consent, which since he could not obtain, he would be doing himself that which he held most fitting " Wishart was accordingly tried on eighteen articles by the Prelates, and condemned to be burned. The sentence was executed at St. Andrews on the second of March, in the presence, says Buchanan, of the Cardinal, " who sat opposite to the stake, in a balcony hung with tapestry and silk hangings, to behold and take pleasure in the joyful sight," while the sufferer cried, from the midst of the flames, " he who now so proudly looks down on me from yonder lofty place shall ere long be as ignominiously thrown down as now he proudly lolls at his ease." These circumstances, so memorable, are not mentioned by any writers except Buchanan, and those who have copied from or quoted him, and there is little doubt that the barbarous triumph of the Cardinal, and the prophecy of the martyr, are mere creatures of his invention.

The Cardinal's death indeed occurred so speedily after that of Wishart, and from circumstances so strange and unexpected, that, had such a prognostication really been uttered, all Europe, in an age so fond and credulous of wonders, would have rung with the fame of it's accomplishment. Beatoun, universally envied for his greatness, constantly detested by a powerful party in the State, by another not less formidable in the Church, and by a neighbouring Potentate as remarkable for a vindictive spirit as for his freedom from all scruples of conscience with regard to the means of gratifying it, was destined to fall by the hands of assassins, actuated by motives of anger for private causes. On the twenty-ninth of May, 1546, five gentlemen, Norman Lesley, eldest son, and John Lesley, brother, to the Earl of Rothes, William Kirkaldy of Grange, Peter Carmichael of Fife, and James Melville, having previously concerted their plan with great

circumspection, entered the castle of St. Andrews, early in the morning, with very few followers. Having secured the porter, by whom, as he well knew all of them, they had been readily admitted within the walls, they appointed, says Spotswood, "four of their company to watch the chamber where the Cardinal lay, that no advertisement should go unto him, and then went to the several chambers in which the servants lay asleep, and, calling them by their names, for they were all known unto them, they put fifty of his ordinary servants, besides the workmen, masons, and wrights, who were reckoned above a hundred (for he was then fortifying the castle) to the gate, permitting none to stay within but the Governor's eldest son, whom they thought best to detain upon all adventures. This was performed with so little noise as the Cardinal did not hear till they knocked at his chamber. Then he asked who was there? John Lesley answered 'my name is Lesley.' 'Which Lesley,' said the Cardinal, 'is that, Norman?' It was answered that he must open to those that were there. The answer gave him notice that they were no friends, therefore, making the door fast, he refused to open. They calling to bring fire, whilst it was in fetching he began to commune with them, and, after some speeches, upon their promise to use no violence, he opened the door, but they, rushing in with their swords drawn, did most inhumanly kill him, he not making any resistance.

Thus fell perhaps the greatest man, in almost every point of consideration, that his country ever produced. His vast talents and his consequent power have combined to preserve that regular chain of the circumstances of his public life of which I have here attempted to give an abstract, while the history of many of his contemporaries who held high offices in the State is almost unknown. In the story of one of whom so much has been told, and that too by his enemies, it is at all events unlikely that any just dispraise should have been omitted, and it must be confessed that, with the exception of some religious severities, his public conduct has been left free of blame. Of his private character less is known.

CARDINAL BEATOUN.

He publicly indulged in a licentiousness not uncommon with the eminent clergy of his time, and lived in open concubinage with a lady of a noble family, Marian Ogilvie, by whom he had six children, of which his eldest daughter was married a few weeks before his death to the heir of the then Earl of Crawford, and respectable descendants from some of the others yet remain in Scotland. Some Latin works of his pen are said to remain in manuscript. An Account of his Negotiations with the King of France, and the Pope, a Treatise of the Supremacy of St Peter over the other Apostles, and a Collection of his Speeches and Discourses on several occasions.



From the collection of

HENRY HOWARD EARL OF SURREY

OB 1547

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLECTION OF

HIS GRACE THE DUKE OF NORFOLK

Engraved by J. H. del. 1546

HENRY HOWARD,

EARL OF SURREY.

THE character of this extraordinary young man reflects splendor even on the name of Howard. With the true spirit and dignity of an English nobleman, and with a personal courage almost romantic, he united a politeness and urbanity then almost peculiar to himself, and all those mild and sweet dispositions which blandish private life. He is said to have possessed talents capable of directing or thwarting the most important state affairs; but he was too honourable to be the instrument either of tyranny or rebellion, and the violent reign under which he had the misfortune to live admitted of no medium. He applied his mind therefore to softer studies, and nearly revived, in an age too rude to enjoy fully those beauties which mere nature could not but in some degree relish, the force of imagination and expression, the polished style, and the passionate sentiments, of the best poets of antiquity.

He was born about the year 1518, the eldest son of Thomas, third Duke of Norfolk, by his second lady, Elizabeth, daughter of Edward Strafford third Duke of Buckingham. The place and method of his education are unknown, or at least very doubtful. The ordinary report of history is that he was bled with Henry Fitzroy, Duke of Richmond, a natural son of Henry the eighth, with whom he certainly contracted an early and strict friendship, and to whom his sister was afterwards married. Anthony Wood says that he was a student of Christ Church, but the name of neither of these young noblemen is to be found in the records of the university. On the thirteenth of February, 1532, he was contracted in marriage to Frances, daughter of John de Vere, fifteenth Earl of Oxford, and in the succeeding

HENRY HOWARD,

year was in the glittering train which attended the King to his celebrated meeting on the French coast with Francis the first Henry on the very day of his return from that brief expedition was married to Anne Boleyn. She was first cousin to Surrey, the magnificence of whose family views seemed now to be consummated by this superb alliance which was to be so soon, and so mournfully broken. He appears however to have avoided all ostentation of the fruits of these advantages, and to have lived for some years in modest retirement, attending to his domestic duties, for his marriage was now completed, and he had a son, and sacrificing at his leisure largely to the muse. In this long interval we scarcely hear of him, except as an attendant, in the character of Deputy Earl Marshal, on the Duke, his father, when that nobleman presided as Lord High Steward on the trial of his kinswoman, the unfortunate Anne, in 1536, and as one of the chief mourners at the funeral, in the following year, of her successor, Jane Seymour. Yet this was the period which many writers, misled by one erroneous authority, represent him as having passed in Italy, in amours and in triumphs which an industrious editor of his works has of late years proved to be wholly imaginary.

In the spring of 1541 he peculiarly distinguished himself in the jousts and tournaments instituted in honour of the marriage of Henry to Anne of Cleve, and in the autumn of the same year we find him in his first public employment. On some hostile demonstrations on the part of France, he was joined in commission with the Earl of Southampton, and the Lord Russell, to visit, and enquire into the state of defence of, the English possessions on that coast. A singular contrast of circumstances occurred to him presently after his return. On the twenty-third of April, 1542, he was invested with the Order of the Garter, and on the thirteenth of the succeeding July was imprisoned in the Fleet, on the ground of a desperate quarrel with a private gentleman, and remained closely confined for some weeks, when he was released,

EARL OF SURREY

on submitting to be bound to keep the peace in the then great sum of ten thousand marks, nor was this the only feud in which he was engaged about that time. Such contests were then of almost daily occurrence among young men of rank, and furnished no argument either of ill temper or ill manners. Personal courage was then cardinal virtue, and in days of public peace they had no other means of evincing that they possessed it. The time however approached for his giving proofs more graceful and becoming. He had hitherto seen no military service but in a predatory incursion of a few days on the Scottish border, in which he accompanied his father. In the mean while however, we find him once more a prisoner in the Fleet, and on charges, or rather on one charge, so wild and extravagant as to remind us instantly of the often-quoted line of the poet—"Great wit to madness," &c. In the spring of 1543, Surrey was accused to the Privy Council, by the Lord Mayor and Recorder of London, of having eaten flesh in Lent, and this he answered effectually by pleading a dispensation. But it was added that he had been accustomed to traverse the streets of London in the dead of night, to break windows by shots from his cross-bow. He acknowledged the truth of the charge, but his defence was yet more strange than his fault. He alledged that he had done so in the hope of correcting the licentious and corrupt manners of the citizens, by impressing them with the idea that such attacks, by means unheard and unseen, were supernatural warnings from providence of impending vengeance. No writer daist repeat this most extravagant tale were it not verified by Surrey himself in one of his poems, and even by the grave authority of the original minutes of the Privy Council yet extant.

His durance was probably of very short continuance, for in the succeeding July he made his first active military essay as a volunteer in the troops sent, under the command of Sir John Wallop, to aid the Emperor in his invasion of France, and was present in the unsuccessful siege of Landrecy. That General, in

a dispatch to Paget, the Secretary of State, says " my Lord of Surrey hath lost no time since his arrival at the army, for he visiteth all things that be meet for a man of war to look upon for his learning, and such a siege hath not been seen this long time in these partes " Thus qualified by some experience, and abundant inclination, he was appointed Marshal of the army with which Henry invaded France in the summer of 1544, of which the Duke his father, commanded the vanguard. In this formidable expedition, which the King professed to direct immediately against the capital, but in which he merely meditated the capture of Boulogne, Surrey was equally distinguished in several partial actions by his prudence and bravery, till he was at length borne off the field, desperately, and, as it was believed, mortally wounded. He again passed over to the French coast in the end of the following summer, where he found a body of three thousand troops, who were directed to put themselves under his command. He was appointed Governor of Guisnes, and then of Boulogne, which with surprising activity he put into that state of defence which it's importance demanded. His vigilance was unceasing, as was his success in the enterprises which he almost daily undertook against the French quarters in his neighbourhood. He seemed to have gained the confidence of Henry, with whom he was allowed to correspond immediately on the conduct of the war, when a check which he suddenly received in an action with their main body, near Montreuil, where the English infantry, which he that day personally commanded, basely abandoned him, gave great offence to that capricious Prince. No expression of anger however immediately occurred, but he was soon after virtually superseded by the appointment of Scymour, Earl of Hertford, to the chief command in France, and received intimation that the King desired to confer with him on the state of Boulogne, which he had no sooner left than a successor in the government of that town was appointed, and soon after his arrival in London, he was sent a prisoner to Windsor Castle

EARL OF SURREY.

Such has been the received report of this precise period of Surrey's life, but more modern enquiry has brought to light many unconnected notices which lead us to infer that his partial military failure was probably but a secondary cause of disgust in the irregular mind of his master. The most remarkable of these are contained in a letter from the Duke, his father, to the Lords of the Council, in which he requests them to thank the King for having advertised him of his son's "foolish demeanour," and adds "well, I pray God he may often remember, and not trust too much to his own wit;" and "I desire you that my son may be so earnestly handled that he may have regard hereafter so to use himself that he may give his Majesty no cause of discontent." It is almost needless to observe that these passages could not by possibility have been meant to refer to any fault or fortune in his military conduct. The true import of them will probably ever remain unknown. In the mean time it has been thought that Hertford, then the rising favourite, and of consequence jealous of the Howards, had prejudiced the King against him. Certain it is that Surrey, irritated to the utmost by the revocation of his command in France, had indulged in bitter and contemptuous remarks and sneers on Hertford, to whose influence he ascribed it, and had even menaced him with revenge under a new reign, a threat most offensive to Henry, whose health was then daily declining, and Hertford is supposed to have heard and repeated those speeches to the King. These however are but conjectures; All that can be safely affirmed is that amidst this obscurity the downfall of Surrey originated.

His restraint in Windsor Castle was short. We find him afterwards a party in several Court ceremonies in the presence of the King, who is recorded to have treated him on those occasions with complacency. But on the twelfth of December, 1546, he was suddenly arrested, as was the Duke, his father, who had on that day arrived in London. It should seem that nothing in the shape of evidence against Surrey had been yet collected, or,

HENRY HOWARD, EARL OF SURREY

if it had, that the Privy Council was ashamed to hear it, for, on his appearance before them, silence was scarcely broken but by his demand of a public trial. He was committed to the Tower, and some weeks passed before that ceremony, for it deserved no better name, was permitted. At length he was indicted at Norwich of high treason, on the sole charge of having quartered on his shield the arms of Edward the Confessor, which was construed a tacit claim to the legal succession, and a special commission was issued for his trial in the Guildhall of London. To give some colour of impartiality to the proceeding, a jury was summoned from Norfolk, the county most under the influence of his family. In addition to the solitary accusation of the indictment no fact was proved against him but that he had used a coronet somewhat resembling a royal Crown, which was stated by his sister, the Duchess of Richmond, who, strange to tell, voluntarily presented herself for that purpose, as well as to disclose some vague private conversations which had passed between them. On these charges, incredible as it might seem, he was found guilty of high treason, and on the nineteenth of January, 1547, two days after his mock trial, and only nine before the death of the tyrant to whose insane barbarity he fell a sacrifice, was beheaded on Tower Hill. His body was interred, near the scene of his death, in the church of All-hallows, Barking, but was removed from thence, in the year 1614, to Framlingham, in Suffolk, where it lies under a superb monument, erected to his memory by his second son, Henry, Earl of Northampton.

The Earl of Surrey's lady, who was married to John Stayning, a gentleman of the county of Somerset, has already been mentioned. He left issue by her two sons, Thomas, who became fourth Duke of Norfolk of his family, and Henry, of whom we have just now spoken, and three daughters, Jane, married to Charles Neville, sixth and last Earl of Westmoreland, Catherine, to Henry nineteenth Lord Berkeley, and Margaret, to Henry seventh Lord Scrope of Bolton.



FIG. 11111111

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH

OB 1547

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HENRY IN THE COLLECTION OF

HIS HIGH HONOR THE LARDER OF THE TOWER

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

THIS Monarch, and surely to no one who ever swayed a sceptre was that title, in its strictest sense, more justly due, was born on the twenty-eighth of June, 1491. He had at once the education of a Prince and a Prelate, and indeed it has been said that his frugal father had intended to place him at the head of the English church: the premature death however of his elder brother, Arthur, invested him with the inheritance to the throne, which he mounted, upon the death of Henry the seventh, on the twenty-second of April, 1509. His accession was marked by the most auspicious circumstances: his kingdom was in a state of perfect tranquillity at home, and in amity with all the nations of Europe, and the treasure left to him by his father was enormous: his youth, his fine person, the liveliness of his disposition, his love of splendor, and his devotion to manly and vigorous exercises, won the hearts of his subjects, and the union in himself of the two mighty Houses which had so long contended for the Crown had fixed unquestionably his right, and augmented his power to rule them. His reign began with a popular sacrifice, and Sir Richard Empson, and Edmund Dudley, who had been the chief ministers to his father's avarice, were led to the scaffold, meanwhile the question, big with such unforeseen and mighty consequences, of his marriage to Catherine of Arragon, widow of his brother Arthur, was agitated as a matter of state policy, and speedily settled, and they were espoused on the third of June, following his father's death.

It was unlikely that a Prince young, haughty, wealthy, and inexperienced, should allow his country long to enjoy the advantages of peace. Pope Julius the second, whose genius was alto-

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

gether warlike and political, had been for some time engaged in a quarrel with France on the affairs of Italy which had divided the powers of the continent into two rancorous parties. He had made overtures to Henry, and the more effectually to gain his assistance, had offered not only to declare him head of the Italian league, but to transfer to him the title of "Rex Christianissimus," so highly cherished by the French Monarchs. Henry consented, and the more readily because Ferdinand, his Queen's father, had lately adopted the same course. It was agreed that he should invade France from the Spanish frontier, which he did, with ten thousand men, to little purpose, while his naval force engaged with better success in the English channel. In the mean time Ferdinand affected to perform his part by marching an army into Navarre, a neutral country, with the secret view, which he accomplished, of annexing the most of it to his own dominions, and leaving the rest to be taken possession of by the French, and virtually abandoned the league. Henry however continued to prosecute his part of the war with vigour; renewed with Leo the tenth the engagements which he had made with Julius, lately deceased; induced the Emperor, by the payment of a large subsidy, to declare against France; and in the summer of 1513 passed over into that country in person, at the head of a powerful army, to make a campaign of three months, more distinguished by its romantic splendor and gallantry than by any important military exploits. It was during this his short absence that the war with Scotland, in which its King, James the fourth, paid with his life the forfeit for his attachment to France, began and ended, and Henry received the trophies of the victory of Flodden Field while he was besieging Tournay, which surrendered to him on the following day. A few months however produced a peace with France. Henry, enraged by new duplicities on the part of his father-in-law, and also of the Emperor Maximilian, not only signed suddenly a treaty of alliance with Louis, but gave his beautiful sister Mary in marriage to that Prince, who was newly

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

forty years older than herself, and who survived the nuptials scarcely three months.

It was at this period that the King's favour to that extraordinary person Thomas Wolsey became evident. He was now Dean of Lincoln, in which station Henry had found him when he succeeded to the Crown, and so necessary had his presence become to his master, that when the army was equipped for the late voyage to France, the care of victualling it was ridiculously committed to him, as a pretext for his personal attendance. He was seen soon after the King's return the sole director of his policy, and the chief partner in his pleasures. * He was invested, as it were at once, with the richest and most powerful ecclesiastical dignities of the realm; was appointed High Chancellor; and at length created a Cardinal. Francis the first, who had succeeded to the throne of France, and the Emperor Charles the fifth, the two most powerful Princes of Europe, conscious of his influence over Henry, courted him with adulation even servile. In their contest for the friendship of our Monarch, Charles, who was the better politician, prevailed. Francis had paid Henry the compliment of soliciting that interview with him which passed on the French coast in 1520 with such chivalrous magnificence, but Charles had visited him in his own dominions immediately before his departure to it; won his heart with schemes of grandeur; and, which was probably more effectual, presented Wolsey with the revenues of two rich bishoprics in Spain, and promised his interest in raising him to the Papedom, to which he already aspired. A war ensued between these Princes in the succeeding year, and a treaty, in which Henry assumed ineffectually the character of mediator, and his interference ended in an offensive alliance between himself, the Emperor, and the Pope, against Francis. This negotiation, by which he engaged to invade France in the following summer with forty thousand men, was concluded at Bruges by Wolsey.

Soon after the King's return, Edward Stafford, Duke of

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

Buckingham, the most powerful subject in the realm, was put to death for having alluded to some remote possibility that he might succeed to the Crown. This has usually been ascribed to the resentment of Wolsey, who had a private quarrel with him, but perhaps ought more properly to be considered as the commencing article in the long catalogue of Henry's rapacities and cruelties. Little remained of the great wealth left by his father, and the attainder of Buckingham furnished a rich prize to an almost exhausted treasury. It was indeed about this period that Henry's character began to assume that deformity the records of which have tended to cast doubts on the truth of history. Unemployed for a short interval of peace, and burning for distinction where-soever it might possibly be found, he burst forth suddenly the polemic champion of that Church which he soon after found it convenient to demolish; attacked Luther, and the new doctrines, with all the weapons of school divinity, in which he was well versed, and presented his book to the Pope, who rewarded his apparent zeal by conferring on him the title of "Defender of the Faith." He now received a second visit from the Emperor, and renewed with him the treaty of the preceding year; the promised invasion of France followed, and passed over in comparatively insignificant depredations near the coast in Britany and Normandy. A war with Scotland, of the same inferior character, succeeded, and was prosecuted with indifferent success for more than a year. Henry's object in all his intercourse with that country, either as a friend or an enemy, was to detach it from its alliance with France, but his policy was not sufficiently refined to deceive that deep-sighted people in negotiation, and his purse was too weak to furnish the means of decisive warfare. It was now that he began to raise money by forced loans, and by what were called benevolences; became perplexed and irritated by their tedious operation; summoned a Parliament and convocation, and, finding them unwilling to grant him the supplies which he required, awed them into compliance by threatening to cut off

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

the heads of those among them who most steadily opposed themselves to his will.

France, however seriously menaced, had hitherto suffered little from the efforts of her powerful enemies, when the rashness of her monarch plunged his affairs suddenly into the deepest calamity. He had determined to attempt the conquest of the Milanese ; invaded Italy ; and, having laid siege to Pavia, was unexpectedly attacked by the Imperialists ; his army completely routed under the walls of that city, and himself taken prisoner. Henry, whose conduct in his league with Charles, and in the management of his own share of the war, had already displayed little policy, now took a step which astonished Europe. Incited by some personal slights which he had of late received from the Emperor, as well as by a jealousy of his overweening power, and perhaps yet more by a capricious generosity, he formed a treaty with the French Regent, and engaged to procure Francis his liberty. That Prince however soon after obtained it by an almost pardonable breach of his parole, and on the eighteenth of September, 1527, concluded at London an alliance with Henry, who took this occasion to renounce for ever all claim to the Crown of France.

While these matters passed, events not less important than surprising were silently approaching in England. The King had resolved to repudiate Catherine. On that great affair, certainly the most considerable in itself and in its consequences, and perhaps the best known and understood, in our modern history, it would be impertinent to dilate here. It may not be too bold to say, that all question on his real motives to this determination has long ceased. No one will now venture to urge on his behalf those scruples of conscience for which his earlier apologists gave him credit. Nay, we seek in vain for a single act in Henry's life which might authorize us even to suspect that he had a conscience. His incitements in this case were of the most simple and ordinary nature an appetite too gross to be expressed in the terms which might properly denote it, and a policy

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

too obvious to deserve the praise of sagacity his inclination to the person of Anne Bullen, and his desire to become the father of an heir with unquestionable title to the crown. The Pope, Clement the seventh, naturally timid, and at that time a prisoner in the hands of the Emperor, who was nephew to Catherine, evaded all endeavours to induce him to dissolve the marriage by his own authority, but at length consented to grant a commission to Wolsey, and another cardinal chosen by himself, to try its validity. The King and Queen were cited to appear before them, and obeyed the summons. Henry of course acknowledged the authority of the court, but Catherine demurred, and, having justified herself on the spot in an unexpected address to the King, the prudent and pathetic features of which will always render it a classical ornament to our history, departed, and refused all future attendance. The Court however proceeded, though slowly, in the exercise of its functions, and the convocations of Canterbury and York decreed at length the invalidity of the marriage. Henry was in daily expectation of a definitive sentence, when the Pope suddenly adjourned the final consideration of the cause to Rome, where a favourable decision was hopeless.

The wrath excited in the King's mind by this disappointment was somewhat appeased by the sacrifice of Wolsey, whose favour had been for some time declining. Parties the most discordant joined in accelerating his fall. Catherine and her rival were equally his enemies. His favour at Rome had been impaired by his assiduity in promoting the divorce, and he had offended the English clergy by conniving at those partial spoliations of the church which formed a prelude to the reformation. He was detested by the nobility for usurping a magnificence which they could not reach. Above all, Henry had determined to renounce the authority of the Papal See, a resolution to the practice of which Wolsey's ecclesiastical and political existence could not but have been a constant impediment. He was prosecuted under an obsolete law, for the breach of which he had long since

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

received a general indemnity, signed by the King; received an ample pardon; was again prosecuted on the same charges; and saved himself from the axe by dying of a broken heart. Henry now attacked the whole body of his clergy, under colour of the authority of the same statute, and they purchased their pardon by the payment of a great sum; proceeded to deprive the Church of Rome of an important part of the ancient revenue which it derived from England; and procured a vote of Parliament, ordaining that any censures which the Pope might issue against those acts should be utterly disregarded. In the mean time the Queen dispatched an appeal to Rome on the question of the divorce, and he received a citation to answer it, which he did very effectually by almost instantly marrying Anne Bullen. The evidence which had been given, and the decree uttered by the convocations two years before, were now deemed all-sufficient, and Cranmer, the Primate, with no other authority, by a formal sentence annulled the King's marriage with Catherine, and ratified his union with Anne. The Parliament however presently after confirmed that sentence, and by a special act settled the inheritance of the Crown on the issue of Anne. The same Parliament declared the King "the only supreme head of the Church of England."

Henry, to whom all modes of faith were indifferent, had not perhaps yet contemplated the establishment in England of the new persuasion. His objects were, first, to shake off the Papal authority, and then to render the wealth of the Church subservient to his occasional necessities. The reformation was but an incidental consequence of his efforts to those ends. At this period therefore, while he shed the blood of several persons, at the head of whom were the illustrious Moore and Fisher, for asserting the Pope's supremacy, he consigned many to the stake for denying the Catholic tenets. He had already suppressed a great number of the smaller religious houses, and his Parliament had possessed him of their revenues, and was proceeding to bolder confiscations,

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

when his attention was for a moment diverted to a domestic concern. Anne's charms had ceased to please, and he had given way to a new sensual partiality. His unfortunate and beautiful Queen, to whose innocence posterity has implicitly subscribed, was put to death, with several other persons, among whom was her brother, and on the same day, or, as some say, on the third day after, he married Jane Seymour, the daughter of a private gentleman. A Parliament, not less subservient than that which had settled the crown on his issue by Anne, paid him on this occasion the compliment of bastardizing his daughters by his two former Queens, and decreeing the inheritance to the fruit of this new marriage

As the breach with the Pope widened, the certainty of a total change in the national religion became daily more manifest. The convocation, in which, those of the two persuasions were nearly equally balanced, at length promulgated, with Henry's sanction, certain articles of faith, comprising a heterogeneous mixture of the doctrines of each party, some of which evidently pointed at the downfall of the regular priesthood. The people, moved not less by the actual interest which they had in the maintenance of that body than by their own pious feelings, rose in enormous masses, which for want of leaders were presently subdued, and Henry, in defiance, proceeded without delay to the suppression of the larger monasteries, and the assumption of their extensive revenues. Still however he hesitated on the unqualified rejection of the old religion. An unaccountable caprice prompted him to become the champion of transubstantiation. He was even absurd enough to debate that question publicly in Westminster Hall, in all the pomp of royalty, surrounded by the Peers spiritual and temporal, with an obscure individual, who was presently after committed to the flames for maintaining his opinion in that conference, and many others were about the same time burned also for denying the real presence. He found the system lately framed by the convocation utterly impracticable, and

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

endeavoured to simplify and explain it by extorting from the Parliament that terrific act well known by the name of the Law of the Six Articles, in which the most favourite tenets of the Church of Rome were enforced by penalties of unheard of severity: at the same time he flattered the reformers by many concessions, particularly by an unqualified permission to use in their family worship the English version of the Scriptures, but this liberty was soon after confined to gentlemen and merchants. There was however no safety, amidst the various, and frequently contradictory regulations of this time, for those who professed either faith with undisguised zeal, and numbers of each were put to death, frequently with circumstances of wanton barbarity. New forms of doctrine and discipline were now contrived. A compendium of tenets was published under the title of "the Institution of a Christian Man," varying in many instances from those which had preceded them; and this again was shortly after followed by the publication of an improved scheme of orthodoxy, entitled "the Erudition of a Christian Man." These, particularly the latter, are believed to have been composed by Henry's own hand, and were certainly uttered under the express authority of the King and Parliament. Fortunately for the unhappy people who were doomed to submit to his rule, he became at length bewildered amidst the confusion which himself had created, and left the jarring elements of his reformation to be reconciled and arranged by the wiser heads, the more sincere hearts, and the cleaner hands of his successors. All activity in this great work now ceased but that of the accuser, the judge, and the executioner.

Jane Seymour had died in giving birth to a son, afterwards Edward the sixth, and Henry had been for two years a widower, when he resolved to seek a consort in the Protestant Courts of Germany. Cromwell, whom he had raised from the most abject obscurity, and whose busy and profitable agency in what may be called the financial branch of the reformation had made him a

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

minister of state and a favourite, proposed to him Anne, daughter of the Duke of Cleves. The connection was politically desirable, and a portrait of the Princess by Holbein had obtained the King's approbation. He espoused her, but on her arrival in England, finding her coarse, both in person and manners, conceived an unconquerable dislike to her, which he expressed to his confidants by calling her "a great Flanders mare." He completed the marriage however, and, for a while concealing from others his aversion, employed himself in devising the most convenient means by which he might dispose of her, when a new object of appetite cut short his deliberations. He became enamoured of Catherine Howard, a niece to the Duke of Norfolk, who might at this time be called his chief minister, and whose envy and hatred, concurring with the disgust which Cromwell had excited in Henry's mind by promoting his late unlucky marriage, wrought suddenly the downfall of that remarkable child of various fortunes. Cromwell was arrested by Norfolk at the Council Board, attainted of treason and heresy, and beheaded, without examination or trial, Anne was divorced without a single legal plea against her, on a tittle of evidence, and it was declared high treason to deny the dissolution of her marriage, and the perpetration of all these enormities by an English Parliament, together with the celebration of the nuptials of Henry with Catherine Howard, occupied but the space of six weeks, in the summer of the year 1540.

Catherine possessed youth, beauty, talents, and politeness, and the raptures with which Henry professed to cherish this new connection exceeded all ordinary bounds. Not contented with offering up a prayer in his own chapel in testimony of his gratitude for it, he commanded the Bishop of Lincoln to compose a regular form of public thanksgiving to the same effect. In the midst of these extravagancies, it was communicated to him by Cranmer that she had indulged, before her marriage, and perhaps after, in the most profligate libertinism, and had even chosen her

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

paramours from among the servants of her grandmother, the old Duchess of Norfolk. He is said to have wept when he received the intelligence. The Queen, and the parties with whom she had offended, were proceeded against by attainder, and put to death. Two remarkable acts of Parliament were now passed, the one constituting it high treason to conceal in future any knowledge, or even strong suspicion, of similar guilt in a Queen Consort; and the other, as though to reach the climax of absurd tyranny, enacting that any woman whom the King might propose to marry, having previously forfeited her honour, should also be subjected to the penalties of high treason if she did not disclose her guilt to him previously to her nuptials.

It was fortunate for Henry, amidst the difficulties, public and domestic, into which for the last ten years he had plunged himself and his people, that it should have suited the interests of neighbouring States to remain at peace with him. The Emperor, as a man his bitter enemy, was restrained by high political motives from attacking him. Francis, on the other hand, was his friend, as well from inclination as policy. Scotland had been too much distracted by factions during the long minority of his nephew, James the fifth, to become an aggressor. Henry himself at length interrupted this apparent concord. Excited by a jealousy not unreasonable of the intimate union which existed between the two latter princes, and by private resentment, not only because Francis had given in marriage to James a Princess whom he intended to have demanded for himself, but on the score of a personal slight which he had received from the King of Scots, he seized the first moment of leisure to break with both. He invaded Scotland with a powerful army, and was at first repulsed; when James, flushed by the deceitful advantage, determined, against the sense of his nobility and commanders, to pursue his invaders into their own country, was utterly routed at Solway Forth; and died, as is said, of grief, on the fourteenth of December, 1542, exactly three weeks after his defeat. With

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH

him this short war also expired; a treaty was concluded, the principal feature of which was a stipulation for the marriage of his infant daughter, afterwards the celebrated Mary, to the young Prince of Wales, which it is almost needless to say was never fulfilled.

The articles concluded on however, especially the latter, were beheld by the Scots with disgust and dread. They saw their country falling gradually under the domination of Henry, and appealed to the old friendship of Francis, who readily engaged to assist them, in the very probable event of a renewal of warfare with England, with troops and money. This negotiation soon became known to Henry, and he lost no time in resenting it. He suddenly established a league with the Emperor, and they agreed to furnish an army, each of twenty-five thousand men, for the invasion of France, chiefly under the pretence of chastising its King for having formed an alliance with the Grand Signor. Henry now assembled his Parliament, which not only granted him ample supplies for the prosecution of this new war, but went even further than any of its compliant predecessors towards surrendering into his hands the whole legislative authority. It expressly recognized and strengthened a former law by which the King's proclamations were declared equivalent to statutes, and constituted a tribunal for facilitating the operation of such manifestations of the royal will, and for punishing those who might disobey them. The year in which he received this monstrous concession, 1543, was further rendered somewhat remarkable by an event of smaller importance; his marriage with Catherine Par, the widow already of two husbands.

The high sounding confederacy between Henry and the most powerful Prince in Europe produced no important results. Their first campaign, in which no very active part fell to the English, ended with little actual advantage to either party, and with increased credit to the military reputation of France; and the second was more distinguished by a peace, in the treaty for which

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

Henry was not even named, suddenly concluded between the Emperor and Francis, than by any notable exploit in the field. It had been in fact a war of sieges, and Henry's reduction of Boulogne, which surrendered to him in person, may perhaps be considered as its most important feature. He returned, full of chagrin, to the consolation of yet further augmented power. A new Parliament, which met in the first of the two years of the war, had, in submission to his dictates, recognized the right of his daughters, Mary and Elizabeth, to their proper places in the line of succession to the throne ; impowered him however to exclude them, should they incur his displeasure ; left unrepealed the act by which they had formerly been declared illegitimate ; and, finally, invested him expressly with the right, should he chance to be left childless, to give the Crown, by his will, or by letters patent, to whomsoever he might think fit. Not content with enacting these fearful absurdities, this Parliament not only absolved him of his obligation to repay a late loan, but actually ordained that such of the lenders as had already been reimbursed should refund into the exchequer the several sums which they had respectively received.

Before Henry passed over into France, he renewed the war with Scotland. A powerful army, which had been transported by sea to Leith, marched to Edinburgh, which they plundered, and mostly burned, and, having horribly ravaged the country to the east of that city, returned almost without loss. Another inroad, made in the autumn of the same year, 1544, was less successful. The English were chased within their own borders, leaving behind them many slain, and more prisoners ; were reinforced, and became again in their turn the assailants. At length, after a year had passed in that barbarous predatory warfare which distinguished the border contests, a treaty of peace was signed with the King of France, in which Scotland, at the instance of that Prince, was included. Henry, thus disengaged, once more recurred to ecclesiastical speculations. Some remnants of Church

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

property yet remained untouched. The same Parliament from which he had of late received such surprising proofs of a blind and senseless devotion, now possessed him of the revenues of the chantries, hospitals, and free chapels, and even of those of the universities. The latter he graciously declined to accept, and hence only, with the exception of his foundation of Trinity College, Cambridge, acquired the reputation of an encourager of learning, and a patron of science. So accustomed had the nation become to the expectation of his arbitrary invasions of property, and of its own practice of an implicit submission to them, that it hailed this forbearance as an emanation of the highest generosity, and acknowledged it by the most absurd and misplaced flattery.

In his renewed labours to establish an uniformity of faith, or at least worship, he was still perplexed by doubts and difficulties. The Prelates, Cranmer and Gardiner, the one a zealous protestant, and a man of pure simplicity, the other, the very crafty but determined advocate for the old religion, were alternately his advisers, and his endeavours to select truth and justice from the contrariety of their counsels, were alike destitute of piety or wisdom. He sought to soothe the irritation which he suffered from these vexations and disappointments, and from a rapid abatement of health, by new acts of persecution. Several persons were brought to the stake for denying, or rather for doubting, his favourite doctrine of transubstantiation, and the Queen herself was saved by her own wit and sagacity from falling a victim to his suspicion that she wavered on that delicate point. But a most unexpected sacrifice of another sort closely impended. Henry had secretly determined to shed the blood of his faithful and long tried minister and general, the Duke of Norfolk, and of his admirably accomplished son, the Earl of Surrey. They were suddenly arrested, and, without a single proof of guilt, indeed almost without a single specific charge, arraigned of high treason, and condemned to die. It were charity to the memory of the

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

tyrant to suppose, and it is somewhat strange that a conjecture seemingly so obvious should not before have occurred, that this last superlative enormity might be ascribed to the insanity which sometimes increases the horrors of approaching death. Be this as it may, Surrey was led to the scaffold, and presently after, Henry, having on that very day, the twenty-eighth of January, 1547, signed an order for the execution of the Duke on the morrow, himself expired.



Engraved by J. Cochin

QUTEN CATHARINE PAR

OB 1518

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HOUTI IN THE COLLECTION OF

DAWSON TURNER F.S.Q. AM. FR. C. I. S.

QUEEN CATHARINE PAR.

OF this Lady, in whose society Henry the Eighth, sated with the gratification of all the rudest passions and appetites, at length sought the charms of domestic comfort, history gives us less information than might have been expected. She certainly possessed considerable talents, and with less discretion might perhaps have acquired a greater fame. Suddenly elevated from private life to sovereign dignity, and by the hand of the most cruel and capricious Prince of his time, she had to dread equally the envy of the rank from which she had been removed, and the jealousy of him who had raised her from it. To shun those perils, she avoided as much as possible all interference in public affairs, devoted to the studies for which an admirable education had qualified her most of the hours which could be spared from the kindest attention to the King's increasing infirmities, and infused into her conversation with all others, an invariable affability, and a simplicity and even humility of manners, which, in one of her station, perhaps bordered on impropriety. She descended from a family of no great antiquity, but which had been somewhat distinguished in public service, and was one of the two daughters of Sir Thomas Par, of Kendal, by Maud, daughter and coheir of Sir Thomas Greene, of Greene's Norton, in Northamptonshire. She had been married in early life to Edward Borough, eldest son of Thomas, Lord Borough of Gainsborough, who dying soon after, she took to her second husband John Nevile, Lord Latimer, by whom also she was left a widow, having had no children by either. Henry married her, his sixth Queen, at Hampton Court, on the twelfth of July 1543, when she was about the age of thirty-four. "In the concluding another match," says Lord Herbert, with some

QUEEN CATHARINE PAR

arehness, "he found a difficulty, for, as it had been declared death for any whom the King should marry to conceal her incontinency in former time, so few durst hazard to venture into those bonds with a King who had, as they thought, so much facility in dissolving them. Therefore they stood off, as knowing in what a slippery estate they were if the King, after his receiving them to bed, should, through any mistake, declare them no maids. So that now he fixed upon the Lady Catharine Par, widow to the Lord Latimer, who, as she was esteemed ever a lady of much integrity and worth, and some maturity of years, so the King, after marriage, lived apparently well with her, for the most part."

Only a single instance, indeed, of discord between them has been recorded, and it had nearly proved fatal to her. Catharine was a zealous protestant. Henry, having gained the private ends at which he aimed in the reformation, had of late years judged it convenient to soothe the Church of Rome with some concessions. With this view he enjoined the observation of his memorable six articles, and prohibited the publication of English translations of the New Testament. The Queen had presumed to argue with him on these, and other imperfections, in the performance of his great work, and the Romanists of the court and council, who secretly entertained strong hopes of the re-establishment, at least in good part, of the ancient faith, began to consider her as a formidable enemy, and determined to use all means to ruin her. A singular opportunity soon presented itself to them, the origin and consequences of which I shall relate somewhat in detail, not only for the sake of probable truth, but for the simple and impressive terms of the unacknowledged authority on which all historians of that reign have given somewhat of the anecdote, in such scraps, more or less, as happened best to agree with their several humours, or to suit their convenience. That authority is John Fox, whom I quote from Mason's abridgment of his vast book; and it seems highly probable, from considerations which the

QUEEN CATHARINE PAR.

compass of this work will not allow me to state, that the relation was derived from Catharine herself, and it may, perhaps, be in her own words.

After some introductory matter, we are told that “the King, in the later end, grew oppinate, and would not bee taught, nor contented withall by argument, yet towards her he refrained his accustomed mannei, for never handmaide sought more to please her mistresse then she to please his humour, and she was of such singular beauty, favour, and comely personage, wherein the King was greatly delighted. But Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, Wrisley” (Wriothesley,) “Lord Chanecelor, and others of the King’s privy chamber, practised her death, that they might the better stop the passage of the gospell, and, having taken away the patronesse of the professors of the truth, they might invade the remainder with fire and sword, but they durst not speake to the king touching her, because they saw the king loved her so well. At length the king was sieke of a sore legge, which made him very froward, and the Queene being with him, did not faile to use all occasions to moove him zealously to proceed in the reformation of the church. The King shewed some tokens of mislike, and broke off the matter, and knit up the arguments with gentle words, and, after pleasant talke, she took her leave. The Bishop of Winchester being there, the King, immediately upon her departure, used these words “It is a good hearing when women beecome such clarks, and much to my comfort to come in mine old age to be taught by my wife.” Then the Bishop shewed a mislike that the Queene would so much forget herselfe to stand in argument with his Majestie, whose judgement and divinitie he extolled to his face above Princes of that and other ages, and of doctours professed in divinitie, and that it was unseemly for any of his subjects to argue with him so malapertly, and that it was greivous to all his counsellours and servants to heare the same inferring how perilous it hath ever been for a Prince to suffer such insolent words of a subject, who, as they are bold

QUEEN CATHARINE PAR

against their Sovereigne's words, so they want not will, but strength, to overthwart them in deeds "

Fox, having detailed much similar argument used by Gardiner, tells us that " he crept so farre into the King at that time, that he, and his fellowes, filled the King's mistrustfull minde with such feares that the King gave them variant to consult together about drawing of articles against the Queene wherein her life might be touched Then they thought it best to begin with such ladies as she most esteemed, and were privy to all her doing , as the Lady Halbert, after Countesse of Pembroke, the Queene's sister , and the Lady Lane," (who was her first cousin,) " and the Lady Twit, all of her privy chamber , and to accuse them upon six articles , and to search their closets and coffers, that they might finde somewhat to charge the Queene , and that being founde, the Queene should be taken, and carried in a barge by night to the Tower, of which advice the King was made privy by Gardiner, and the Lord Chancellor, to which they had the King's consent, and the time and place appointed This purpose was so finely handled that it grew within few daies of the time appointed, and the poore Queene suspected nothing, but after her accustomed manner, visited the King, still to deale with him touching religion, as before "

We are then told that a copy of the articles of accusation was accidentally dropt by one of the council, and somehow found its way to the Queen, who was thereupon, as well she might, suddenly taken dangerously ill, that Henry visited her with such appearance of kindness that she soon after became sufficiently recovered to repair to his apartment, where he artfully contrived to turn the conversation to their old topic of debate " But the Queene," says Fox, "perceiving to what purpose this his talke tended, your Majestie doth well know, quoth shee, and I am not ignorant of, what great weaknesse by our first creation is allotted to us women, to be subject unto man as our head; from which head all our direction must proceed. And, as God

QUEEN CATHARINE PAR.

made man after his own image, that, being indued with more speciall gifts of perfection, hee might be stirred to meditate heavenly things, and obey his commandements, so he made woman of man, of whom, and by whom, she is to bee commanded and governed, whose womanly weaknesse ought to bee tolerated and ayded, that by his wisdomes such things as be lacking in her might be supplied. Therefore, your Majestie being so excellent in ornaments of wisdomes, and I so much inferiour in all respects of nature, why doth your Majestie in such defuse causes of religion require my judgement, which, when I have uttered and said what I can, yet I must and will referre my judgement in this and all causes to your Majestie's wisdomes, as my onely anker, supreme head, and the governor heere on earth next unto God?"

"Not so, by St Mary, said the King You are become a doctor, Kate, to instruct us."

"She answered Your Majestie hath much mistaken mee, who have ever thought it preposterous for the woman to instruct her husband, but rather to learn of him, and, where I have beene bold to hold talke with your Majestie whereof there hath seemed some difference in opinion, I have not done it to maintaine opinion, but to minister talke, that your Majestie might with less grieve passe the paine of your infirmities, being attentive to your talke, and that I might receive some profit by your Majestie's learned discourse, wherein I have not missed any part of my desire, alwaies referring my selfe in such matters to your Majestie."

"Then, said the King, tendeth your argument to no worse end? Then wee are now as perfect friendes as ever wee were And he imbraced her, and kissed her, saying it did him more good to heare these words than if he had heard newes of a hundred thousand pound fallen to him"

"On the day that was appointed for the aforesaid tragedy the King went into his garden, whether the Queene, being sent for, came, onely the three ladies abovenamed waiting on her, with

QUEEN CATHARINE PAR.

whom the King was as pleasant as ever hee was in his life. In the middest of his mirth, the houre appointed being come, the Lord Chancellor cometh into the garden, with forty of the King's guard at his heeles, with purpose to take the Queene, with the three ladies, to the Tower, whom the King, steinly beholding, called him to him, who, on his knees, whispered to the King The King cal'd him knave, arrant knave, and beastly foole, and commanded him to avant out of his presence, which words the Queene heard, though they were low spoken. Then he departed, with his trame, the whole mould of his device broken. The Queene, seeing the King so chafed, spoke for the Lord Chancellor. Ah, poore soule, quoth hee, thou little knowest how evill hee deserveth this grace at thy hands he hath been towards thee, sweetheart, an arrant knave, and so let him goe." The matter and mannei, of this narrative will furnish a sufficient apology for so lengthened a quotation

Catharine's attachment, however, to the reformed religion was perhaps not wholly useless to Henry. When he departed in 1544 on his famous expedition to the coast of France, he appointed her Regent during his absence, to awe, as Lord Herbert conceives, the Papists, who well knew her aversion to them, and it seems to have been the only mark of his politieal confidence that she ever received. He bequeathed to her by his Will, in which he acknowledges "her great love, obedience, chasteness of life, and wisdom," in addition to her jointure, three thousand pounds in plate, jewels, and furniture, and one thousand pounds in money, a wretched legacy, valuable even as money then was, to a Dowager Queen.

Slenderly provided for, obnoxious to a very powerful party, and not without some previous tenderness towards the object of her choice, she sought protection in a fourth marriage with Thomas Lord Seymour of Sudely, Lord Admiral of England, and brother to the Protector Somerset, which produced to her the most fatal consequences. The Admiral, in whom all other passions

QUEEN CATHARINE PAR.

and sentiments gave way to that most inordinate ambition, which, for the time, he had gratified by marrying the widow of his King, presently conceived a scheme for mounting yet a step higher by espousing the Princess Elizabeth, some curious circumstances of his intercourse with whom will be found in their proper place in this work. While Catharine laboured under the miseries of jealousy on that account, she was assailed by the envy of the Duchess of Somerset, "a woman," says the chief writer on the reign of Edward the Sixth, "for many imperfections, intolerable, but for pride monstrous." Neglected by a husband whom she loved, insulted by an inferior, and beholding a rival in her daughter-in-law, the Queen's constitution sunk under an accumulation of so many griefs. It has been commonly asserted that she died in child-birth, a report which, adverting to the fact that she had been childless in three previous marriages, might reasonably be doubted, notwithstanding the proof which we have from one of her own letters to her husband that she believed herself to be pregnant. It has been said too, with yet less probability, that she was taken off by poison. Both these statements may perhaps be fairly traced to the same source, the confession of her attendant, the Lady Tyrwhit, (see Haynes and Muidin's State Papers,) given in evidence on another occasion. That document informs us that the Queen, two days before her death, said, "that she dyd *fere* (qu. feel?) such things in herself that she was sure she could not lyve." That she used also these words "My Lady Tyrwhyt, I am not wel handelyd, for thos that be about me caryth not for me, but standyth lawghyng at my gref, and the more good I wyl to them, the less good they wyl to me." That the Admiral, whom she then had by the hand, said, "why, sweetheart, I wold you no hurt" to which she replied aloud, no, my Lord, I think so, and imedyetly she sayed to him, in his ere, but, my Lord, you have yeven me many shrowd tauntes." Afterwards, says Lady Tyrwhit, she spoke to him "very rowndly and shartly (qu. sharply?) sayeng, my Lord, I wold have geven a thowsand

QUEEN CATHARINE PAR

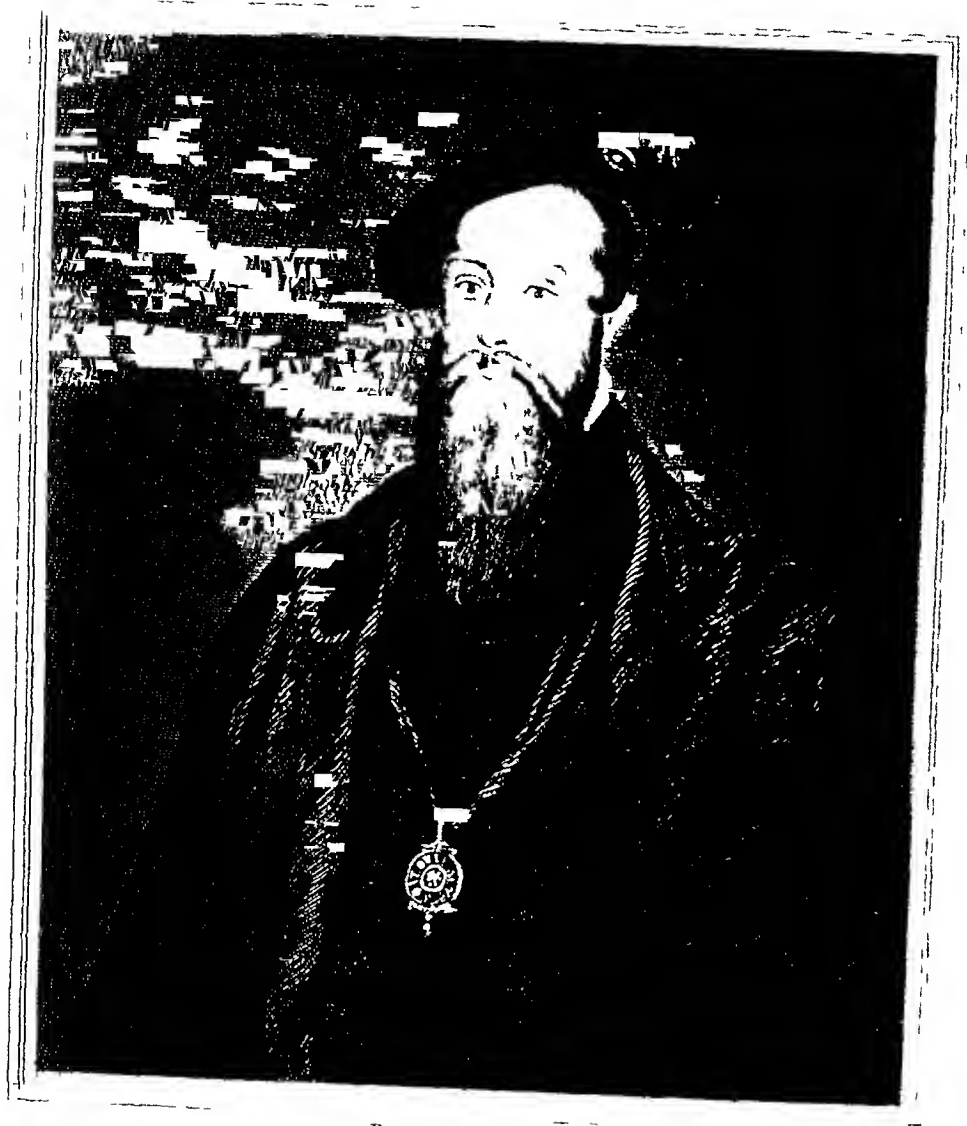
maikes to have had my full talke with Hewyke the first day I was *delueryd*, but I doorst not, for displesyng of you." The evidence for the child-birth and the poisoning seems then to rest on the Queen's having used the words "delivered," and "fear," for the other speeches ascribed to her in this conversation were but the ordinary reproaches which any woman might be expected to utter to an unkind husband

She died at Lord Seymour's scat of Sudeley, in Gloucestershirc, on Wednesday, the fifth of September, 1548, and was buried in the chapel of the castle. In 1782, her tomb was opened, and the face, particularly the eyes, on removing the cerecloth which covered that part of her embalmed corpse, are said to have been found in perfect preservation. A detailed account of this exhibition, and of the odious negligence with which the royal remains were afterwards treated, may be found in the ninth volume of *Archæologia*

Catharine was learned, and a lover of learning. The fame of her affection to literature, as well as to religion, induced the University of Cambridge to implore her intercession with Henry on the occasion of the act which placed all colleges, chantries, &c at the King's disposal. She published, in 1545, a volume of Prayers and Meditations, "collected," as the title informs us "out of holy woorkes," and in some editions of this little book, for it was many times reprinted, may be found fifteen psalms, and some other small devotional pieces, mostly of her original composition. She wrote also "The Lamentation of a Sinner, bewailing the Ignorance of her blind Life," meaning the errors of Popery, in which she had passed the earlier part of it. This was printed after her death, with a preface written by Secretary Cecil, afterwards Lord Burghley. In the former of these volumes we find this prayer "for men to saye entring into battayle," which affords a fair example at once of the benignity and humility of her disposition, and of the character of her style. "O Almighty Kinge, and Lord of hostes ! which, by thy angells thereunto appointed,

QUEEN CATHARINE PAR.

doest minister both waie and peace; and which diddest give unto David both courage and strength, being but a little one, unarmed, and unexpeit in feats of warre, with his slinge to sette uppon and overthrowe the great huge Goliath; our cause being just, and being enforced to entre into warie and battaile, we most humbly beseche thee, O Lord God of hostes, sooe to turn the hearts of our enemyes to the desire of peace that no Christian bloud be spilt, or els giaunt, O Lorde, that, with small effusion of bloud, and to the little hurt and dommage of innocentes, we may, to thy glory, obtayne victory; and that, the warres being soone ended, we may all with one heart and minde knitte together in concorde and unitie, laude and prayse thee, which livest and reignest world without end. Amen."



Engraved by Tho Wright

THOMAS LORD SEYMOUR OF SUDLEY

OB 1519

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF WHICH IN THE COLLECTION OF

THE MOST NOBIL THE MARQUIS OF BATH

Printed by J. G. & Co. 1810 in Hindostan by the Press of the East India Company

THOMAS, LORD SEYMOUR

OF SUDELEY.

THIS eminent person, who seems to have possessed all the qualities necessary to form what the world usually calls a great man, except patience, was the third son of Sir John Seymour, of Wolf Hall, in Wiltshire, by Margaret, daughter of Sir Henry Wentworth, of Nettlested, in Suffolk. His family, which had stood for ages in the foremost rank of English gentry, was suddenly elevated by the marriage of his sister Jane to Henry the eighth. It is well known that Edward, his eldest surviving brother, was by that Prince created Viscount Beauchamp, and Earl of Hertford, and that in the succeeding reign he was appointed by the council governor of the infant King, and Protector of the realm, obtained the dignity of Duke of Somerset, and perished on the scaffold. Both were eminently distinguished for military skill and gallantry, but Thomas had the advantage in talents; was remarkable for a general firmness of mind, a daring spirit of enterprise, and the loftiest ambition. He had served with the utmost merit and applause in Henry's wars against the French, and, in or about the year 1544, was placed for life in the post of Master of the Ordnance: on the accession of his nephew, Edward the sixth, he was constituted Lord Admiral of England, created Baron Seymour, of Sudley, in Gloucestershire, and elected a Knight of the Garter. Till this period these great men had manifested a mutual cordiality and confidence. The constant favour of Henry had left no room for alarm in the timid breast of the one, and the haughty strictness of his rule had curbed the swelling pride of the other, but the death of that imperious Prince was the signal for their total

THOMAS, LORD SEYMOUR

disunion The features of a plan of aggrandisement which could not but have been premeditated presently disclosed themselves in the conduct of Seymour, and the most prominent of them appeared in his determination to connect himself with royalty by marriage. It has been said, but the report is unsupported by historical evidence, that he first attempted to win the affections of the Princess Mary If it were so, his advances must have been made, which is highly improbable, during her father's reign, for immediately after that Prince's death he paid his addresses to the Queen Dowager, Catherine Parr, and with so little reserve that then more than ordinary intimacy became presently evident to the whole Court Catherine was easily persuaded, for he had been a favoured suitor before her marriage to the King, and accepted him for her fourth husband, long before the formality of her ostensible mourning for Henry had expired

The discord between the brothers may be historically traced almost to the precise period of this marriage, and has been wholly ascribed to it by a writer equally remarkable for vehemence of prejudice, and carelessness of truth Sanders, the well-known literary champion of Romanism, not content with observing, which he might probably have done with justice, that their quarrel originated in the hatred conceived by the Protector's lady, Anne Stanhope, a woman of intolerable pride and malice, against Catherine, would persuade us that its entire progress, and tragical termination, were directed solely by her influence "Then arose," says Sanders, "a very great contest between Queen Catherine Parr and the Protector's wife who should have the precedence, and the contest rested not in the women, but passed to the men and when the emulation continually increased, the Protector's wife would not let her husband alone, till at last it came to pass that the Protector, who, although he ruled the King yet was ruled by his wife, must cut off his brother, that nothing might be an hindrance to her will" Hayward, the able historian of that reign, without seeking for a corroboration of

OF SUDELEY

this tale, for which he would have sought in vain, has adopted Sanders's report, and even enlarged on it, in more than one of those florid passages so frequent in his interesting work. The only document however on record which tends to prove, and that rather obscurely, even that any jealousy subsisted on the score of the marriage is a letter from Catherine to the Admiral, in the year 1548, preserved in Haynes's State Papers, which commences with these words, and then turns to other subjects "Thys schalbe to advertysche yow that my Loid your brother hathe thys afternone a lyttell made me warme Yt was fortunate we wai so much dystant, for I suppose els I schulde have bitten him. What cause have they to feare havyng such a wyffe?" The truth is that Seymour, from the very hour of Edward's accession, had been meditating the means of supplanting his brother in the King's affections, and in the exercise of his public authority

The Protector was not long unapprised of these designs Even so early as the summer of 1547, while he was fighting victoriously in Scotland, he received intelligence that his brother was engaged in great and dangerous intrigues against him at home Led astray as well by goodness of heart as weakness of judgement, he had framed the fantastic theory of building the strength of his government on the affection of the people, and had therefore courted the Commons at the expence of the Aristocracy. Seymour availed himself of this error, and industriously fomented the discontent which it had excited among the nobles, but his rashness impelled him to premature steps Without sufficient preparation, he endeavoured to prevail on them to propose in Parliament the abrogation of his brother's high faculties, and the election of himself to the station of Guardian of the King's person, artfully, however, and with an affected modesty, declining the office of Protector, with the double view of securing to his own interests him who might eventually be elected to it, and of controuling his government by the exercise of a secret influence over the royal

THOMAS, LORD SEYMOUR

mind He even prevailed on Edward to write a letter to the Parliament, desiring them to appoint him to the first of those trusts His suggestions, however, were received with coldness and disgust, and he resented the disappointment with the undisguised anger and the unguarded speeches of one to whom a just right had been denied The Protector, on his return, unwillingly prepared to proceed against him as a public criminal, and accepted with eagerness the concessions and apologies which he was at length prevailed on to offer, but those motions on the Admiral's part were wholly insincere, and his ambitious resolutions perhaps acquired new force from the privacy with which he was now compelled to cherish them.

Artifice indeed seems to have been foreign from his nature, but he had no alternative but to practice it or to abandon his designs. He again addressed himself secretly to the young King, endeavoured to inflame his passions with the desire of independent sway, told him that he was "a poor King, and could not pay his own servants," and soothed the generosity of his disposition by supplying him privately with money, but the purity of Edward's heart, and the superiority of his mind, rendered these stratagems fruitless, while his affection to his uncles induced him, till the secret was at length wrung from him, to conceal them. In the mean time an increasing intimacy, of a singular and mysterious nature, was observed to subsist between the Admiral and the young Elizabeth, who had been placed, upon the death of her father, under the care of the Queen Dowager, and remained an inmate in her family after her marriage to Seymour. Elizabeth had then scarcely passed her fourteenth year, and his attentions to her seem to have commenced with those innocent freedoms which it is usual to take with children. Catherine herself was often a party in their levities. But it was not long before he addressed himself to her with privacy, or in the presence only of some of her principal attendants, whom it is evident he had secured to his interests Elizabeth, on her part, became

enamoured of him, and the Queen, after indulging an easy and unsuspecting temper, even to absurdity, was at length jealous, and procured the removal of the object of her uneasiness to the custody of others. On these curious circumstances history, which is not at all surprising, has been wholly silent. They have been disclosed by the publication, in that fine collection, Haynes's State Papers, of the unwilling testimonies of several persons preparatory to the prosecution of the Admiral, to which I must refer the reader for particulars too numerous, and, in some instances, too gross, to be here recited. The motives to his conduct in the pursuit of this amour, for so it must be called, are scarcely doubtful. If the princess had surrendered her honour to his importunities, she could have bribed him to secrecy only by submitting to become his wife, a condescension which in that case he certainly intended to exact. Catherine, it is true, was then living, and in good health, but might easily have been put out of the way. A man at once powerful, active, ambitious, and unprincipled, could at that time scarcely encounter an insurmountable difficulty. She died very soon after, not by poison, as has been reported, but in childbirth, and circumstances which presently succeeded effectually arrested the progress of the Admiral's designs on Elizabeth.

Some time, however, was yet allowed to him for the contrivance of new schemes. Those considerations which led Edward's Council to put the Princess Elizabeth into the hands of Catherine Parr had induced them to place Jane Grey also, who was next in succession to the Crown, in the same custody. After the death of Catherine, the Marquis of Dorset, father to Jane, became desirous to recal his daughter into the bosom of her family. Seymour, under various prettexts, resisted his importunities, and, on being earnestly pressed, secretly represented to the Marquis the probability, should she still be permitted to remain under the protection of himself and his mother, that he might contrive to unite her in marriage to the young King. This overture, such was the

THOMAS, LORD SEYMOUR

coarseness of the age, was accompanied by a present of five hundred pounds, and Dorset accepted it, and submitted. The Admiral was actuated in this negotiation by two motives. Dorset, though a man of weak intellect, possessed a powerful influence derived from his lady's relation in blood to the throne, from his great estates, and, above all, from the innocence and integrity of his character. Seymour was anxious to ensure his support; but this was not all. the Protector, or, perhaps, rather his lady, had proposed their heir as a husband for Jane, and the Admiral was not less eager to thwart their views, than in the pursuit of his own. To his envy of his brother's greatness a private injury had lately added the desire of revenge. Henry had bequeathed to the Queen Dowager some estates, and certain valuable jewels, to the possession of neither of which she had been admitted. After her death, Seymour, seemingly with strict justice, claimed them of the Council, and that body, under the direction, as he conceived, of the Protector, refused to admit his claim.

Somerset, however, seems to have acted, through the whole of their contest, with the most exemplary patience and moderation, resulting from a rooted tenderness for his brother, but new discoveries, rapidly succeeding each other, at length compelled him, not only for his own security, but for that of the realm, to interpose his authority. In addition to the instances that have been already given of Seymour's dangerous disposition, it now appeared that he had seduced by presents and promises almost all those persons who had ready access to the King's person, and were most in his confidence, that he had propagated the most injurious reports of the secret policy of his brother's government, asserting, among a multitude of other calumnies, that he was raising in Germany a mercenary force, by the aid of which he intended to establish a despotism in England, that he had established a formidable influence in every county of the realm, had computed that he could raise even among his own tenants, servants, and retainers, ten thousand men, had actually provided

OF SUDELEY.

arms for their use, and had gained to his interests Sir John Sharrington, Master of the Mint at Bristol, who had engaged to supply him with money to equip them. The Protector, thoroughly informed on all these points, still hesitated. He endeavoured once more to try the effect of entire confidence and affectionate persuasion, reasoned and entreated with the coolness and impartiality of a disinterested friend, and strove, even at this late period, to reclaim his brother's kindness and duty by new favours and distinctions. Seymour, among whose faults treachery and deceit appear to have had no place, received these condescensions with a haughty sullenness, and would engage for nothing, and Dudley, Earl of Warwick, whose secret plans for raising himself on the ruins of the family of Seymour were already approaching to maturity, seized the opportunity afforded by this obstinacy of persuading the Protector to give up to his fate a man by whose talents and courage they would probably have been rendered abortive. Somerset, thus influenced, deprived his brother of the office of Admiral, and on the sixteenth of January, 1549, O.S. signed a warrant for his imprisonment in the Tower.

A committee of three Privy Counsellors was now deputed to take those examinations from which most of the foregoing particulars of Seymour's offences have been derived, the result was digested into thirty-three articles, which were laid before the Privy Council, and that assembly went presently after in a body to the Tower to interrogate himself, but he refused to answer, demanded time to consider the charges, and a public trial, in which he might be confronted with the witnesses. This was denied, and it was determined to prosecute him by a bill of attainder. No other instance perhaps can be found in which that suspicious and unpopular process had been at any time conducted with so much justice and fairness. It occupied exclusively the attention of the Parliament from the twenty-fourth of February till the fifth of March, and the multifarious facts alledged were canvassed with the most scrupulous exactness.

THOMAS, LORD SEYMOUR OF SUDELEY.

The Peers, by whom it was passed unanimously, paid the compliment, unusual in those days, to the lower House, of permitting such of their own body as could give evidence on the ease to be there examined *vivâ voce*; and in the latter assembly, more than four hundred members being on that day present, it was opposed only by nine or ten voices. The Protector, now, with a reluctant hand, signed a warrant for Seymour's execution, and, on the twentieth of March, he suffered death on Tower Hill, in a sullen silence, and with a courage so ferocious and desperate, as to have given occasion to Bishop Latimer to say, in his fourth sermon, that "he died very dangerously, iksomely, horribly, so that his end was suitable to his life, which was very vicious, profane, and unreligious"

Lord Seymour was never married, but to Catherine Parr, who left to him an only daughter, Mary, born in September, 1548, who survived him, and was restored in blood almost immediately after his death, but died an infant



FIGURE 1

SIR ANTHONY DENNY

OB. 1519

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HOLBEIN IN THE COLLECTION OF

THE RIGHT HON^{BLE} THE LAMB OF RADNOR

SIR ANTHONY DENNY.

AMIDST the horrible extravagances of ferocity and caprice which stain the annals of Henry the eighth, we discover that he was not incapable of firm, and even tender, friendship. His attachments in this kind were few, but lasting, and their most remarkable objects were Brandon, and Denny, the servants and companions of his younger days, from whom his affection seems never to have swerved. Denny appears to have had one of those unostentatious characters which seldom long survive their owners; to have avoided intirely the envied labours of the State, and, after his youth had passed away, even the splendor and the festivities of the Court. His merits, however, have not been left wholly unrecorded; but the best presumption of his general worth may be founded perhaps on the total silence of detraction in a time equally factious, unprincipled, and uncharitable.

Some writers have insisted on the antiquity of his family, but the truth is that he was very ordinarily descended. Dugdale expressly says that he could discover none of his ancestors beyond his father, respecting whom also gross mistakes have been made in all printed authorities, in which he is uniformly stated to have been Thomas Denny, and to have married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Mannock. The Thomas who did so marry, was in fact one of the elder brothers of Anthony, who was the fourth, but at length second surviving son of Edmund Denny, first a Clerk, afterwards Remembrancer, and at length a Baron of the Exchequer, and their mother was Mary, daughter and heir of a gentleman of the name of Troutbeck. Anthony was born on the eighteenth of January, in the year 1500; commenced his education at St Paul's school, and completed it in St. John's College, in Cambridge, from whence he carried with him an eminent reputation for

SIR ANTHONY DENNY.

universal learning By what good fortune he obtained his introduction to the Court we are wholly ignorant, but it must have been at a very early time of life, and he seems to have acquired almost immediately not only Henry's favour but his confidence. He was made a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber, then an office immediately about the royal person, to which he was soon after brought yet nearer by the appointment of Groom of the Stole. He became the King's constant and familiar attendant in all his progresses, and in his magnificent excursions to the continent, combated with him in the jousts, and relieved the conversation of his private table by mingling with its gaieties the sober charms of science.

He had probably been an early convert to the new system of faith, for which, at all events, he shewed an extraordinary zeal in the very commencement of the reformation in England; but he is no where stigmatised as a persecutor, and indeed seems to have shunned all concern in the active measures by which that great event was accomplished. Few men, however, partook more largely in the spoil of the ancient Church. Henry granted to him in 1537 the dissolved Priory of Hertford, the manor of Butterwick, in the parish of St. Peter, in St. Alban's and the manors of the Rectory, and of the Nunnery, in Cheshunt, and of Great Amwell, all in the county of Hertford, and in 1540, several valuable lands, part of the possessions of Waltham Abbey, in Essex, to which about the same time was added a lease for thirty-one years of all the remaining estates of that rich house, the whole of which were afterwards gradually obtained in fee from Edward the sixth by himself, and his widow. On the sixteenth of January, 1541, nearly all the demesnes of the yet more wealthy Abbey of St. Alban's were settled by Act of Parliament on him and his heirs, including the manors, advowsons, and most of the lands, of eleven parishes, together with many extensive farms in others. To these enormous gifts, amounting, at the least, to twenty thousand acres, in that part of the kingdom which

was then in the highest state of cultivation, and all within thirty miles of the metropolis, the King added in 1544 the great wardship of Margaret, only daughter and heir of Thomas Lord Audley, the intermixture of whose estates with his own contributed to raise his influence in Essex and Hertfordshire into a sort of dominion. He represented the latter county in the first Parliament of Edward the sixth, as it is scarcely to be doubted he had also in the preceding reign, a fact of no great importance, which a large chasm in our public records leaves in uncertainty.

He had not the distinction of knighthood till after 1541, about which time he was sworn of the Privy Council, and on the thirty-first of August, 1546, he was joined in a commission with two other trusty servants of the Crown to sign all public instruments in the King's name. Henry had fallen into such weakness as to be incapable of performing that office with his own hand, and a stamp was prepared for his use about that time, in imitation of his signature. It is probable therefore that this high trust was exercised by Denny and his colleagues merely for the short interval between the commencement of the King's inability and the completion of the stamp, which it has been pretty well ascertained that Henry used to apply with his own hand. In the succeeding January he attended his master's death-bed, and in the performance of his last duty, gave a signal proof of his fortitude, as well as of his piety and fidelity. "The King continued in decay," says Burnet, in his history of the reformation, "till the twenty-seventh of the month, and then, many signs of his approaching end appearing, few would adventure on so unwelcome a thing as to put him in mind of his end, then imminent, but Sir Anthony Denny had the honesty and courage to do it, and desired him to prepare for death, and remember his former life, and to call on God for mercy, through Jesus Christ. Upon which the King expressed his grief for the sins of his past life, yet he said he trusted in the mercies of Christ, which were greater than they were. Then Denny moved him to call in the aid of a pious

SIR ANTHONY DENNY.

minister, and the King desired him to send for Archbishop Cranmer," &c. Henry appointed him of the Council to Edward the sixth, and one of the executors of his will, in which he bequeathed him a legacy of three hundred pounds

Sir Anthony Denny did not long survive his royal friend. He died, little past the prime of life, at Cheshunt, on the tenth of September, 1549. Among the poems of Henry, Earl of Surrey, we find some lines, of no great interest, which seem to have been designed for his epitaph, and were therefore probably the work of some other pen, as Surrey died three years before him

"Death, and the King, did, as it were, contend
Which of them two bare Denny greatest love
The King, to shew his love can far extend,
Did him advance his betters far above
Near place, much wealth, great honour, eke him gave,
To make it known what power great Princes have

But when death came, with his triumphant gift,
From worldly earke he quit his wearied ghost,
Free from the corpse, and strait to heaven it lift
Now deem that can who did for Denny most
The King gave wealth, but fading and unsure :
Death brought him bliss that ever shall endure "

An epistle, however, addressed to him by Roger Ascham, affords us some view of his character, particularly in the following remarkable passage "Religio, doctrina, respublica, omnes curas tuas sic occupant ut extra has tunc res nullum tempus consumas." But the largest tribute extant to his memory is to be found in an heroic poem, by Sir John Cheke, published in Styrpe's life of that eminent person, from which I will beg leave to insert rather a long extract

"Deneius venit ad superiores, mortalia linquens,
Britannos inter clarus—
Quis dignam illius factis vocem, quis promere verba
Possit, et excelsas laudes æquare canendo ?
Quæ pietas, et quanta viri ? Quis fervor in illo

SIR ANTHONY DENNY.

Religionis erat? Quam purus cultus in illo
Cælestis patris? Quanta in Christum fidei vis
Extitit illius sacrata morte redempti?
Munera quæ rursum? Quos & libavit honores
Justitiæque speique Deo? Quæ victima laudis
Cæsa fuit? Grati cordisque orisque diurna
Hostia, quam sæpe est hominum divumque parenti
Oblata in Christo Christinam haud immemor unquam
Ille fuit, propter divinam sanguine fuso,
Mortem mortales quæ primum conciliavit,
Peccati, scelerisque, ruina, et pendere pressos
Quid memorem Henricum claro de stemmate Regem,
Henricum octavum terræ, marisque potentem?
O quibus hic studius, quo illum est amplexus amore,
Quem sibi subjectumque bonum, servumque fidelem
Scribat, et officia hæc haud parvo munere pensans,
Ostendit se herumque bonum, Regemque benignum
Consiliumque lepos quantum superadditus auget,
Et juvat optatas ad res bene conficiendas,
Ille alios tantum superat, qui flectere mentem
Henrici potuit, miscens nunc utile dulci,
Seria nunc levibus texens, nunc grandia parvis
Quam facilem cursum hic alius ad vota sequenda
Fecerat, atque aditum multis facilem patefecit?
Quam bona multa alius, et quam mala nulla cuiquam
Intulit? Et laudem summam virtutis habebat
Hujus, qui nullos nec apertos læserat hostes," &c

Sir Anthony Denny married Joan, daughter of Sir Philip Champernoun, of Modbury, in Devonshire, a lady of remarkable beauty and talents, and a zealous supporter of the reformed religion, which she openly avowed, to her great hazard. Fox has recorded that she sent money by her servants, to the amiable and courageous Anne Ayscue, who afterwaïd suffered death at the stake, when a prisoner in the Compter. She brought him two sons, and three daughters. Henry, the eldest son, married, first, Honora, daughter of William, Lord Grey of Wilton, and, secondly, Elizabeth, daughter of John, Lord Grey of Pyrgo, and had by the former an only son, Edward, who was by James the

SIR ANTHONY DENNY.

first created Baron Denny, of Waltham, in Essex, and by Charles the first, Earl of Norwich, which dignities became extinct at his death, as he left an only daughter, his sole heir, wife to James Hay, Earl of Carlisle. Sir Edward Denny, second son of Sir Anthony, married Margaret, daughter of Peter Edgecumbe, of Mount Edgecumbe, in Devonshire, by whom he was the ancestor of a family of his name now remaining in Ireland. The daughters were Douglas, wife of Richard Dyce; Mary, married to Thomas Astley, a Groom of the Privy Chamber; and Honora, to Thomas Wingfield.



FIGURE 157. 11

EDWARD SEYMOUR DUKE OF SOMERSET

OB 1552

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HOLBEIN IN THE COLLECTION OF

THE MOST NOBIL THE MARQUIS OF BATH

EDWARD SEYMOUR,

DUKE OF SOMERSET.

EVEN a faint sketch of the life of such a person as the Protector Somerset can scarcely be expected in a work like this. Inseparable from the history of all the great public transactions of a very important period, and enveloped in the mysteries of faction, it presents a theme not less for argumentative disquisition than for extended and exact narration. A treatise embracing both would be a great historical acquisition, but he who is bound to confine such a subject to the limits of a brief memoir must be content to restrict himself to a dry detail of facts, or to an imperfect series of conjectures and presumptions.

The Protector was the eldest of the six sons of Sir John Seymour, of Wolf Hall, in Wiltshire, by Margaret, daughter of Sir Henry Wentworth, of Nettlested, in Suffolk. His father, who, though the heir of a long line of wealthy and powerful ancestors, had passed his life in the courts and armies of Henry the seventh and eighth, placed him, while yet a youth, in the view of the latter of those Princes, recommended as well by the best education of the time, for he had studied profitably in both Universities, as by a turn for military gallantry, and an eminent sweetness of temper. The King received him favourably, and permitted him to accompany the Duke of Suffolk in his expedition to the coast of France in August 1523, where his bravery in several actions was rewarded by that nobleman with the honour of knighthood, conferred in the field. He returned to distinguish himself in the warlike sports of the Court in which Henry so much delighted, was one of the chosen party which graced

EDWARD SEYMOUR.

Wolsey's splendid embassy to Paris in 1527, and attended the King at his celebrated interview with Francis the first in 1532, holding at that time the honourable, but now obsolete, office of Esquire of the royal body

Having thus slowly attained to that station, and perhaps indulging little hope of further preferment, an event occurred which ranked him suddenly among the highest in the realm. Henry became enamoured of his sister Jane, and, even before his passion for her was publicly known, raised her to the throne. On the fifth of June, 1536, a few days after the marriage, Seymour was raised to the dignity of Viscount Beauchamp, and on the eighteenth of October, in the ensuing year, created Earl of Hertford. The untimely death of the Queen, which occurred just at that period, caused no diminution of the royal favour towards him, but Henry, unwilling to expose her family to the envy of the Court, prudently delayed to advance him to high offices, nor was he placed in any but the comparatively insignificant posts of Chancellor and Chamberlain of North Wales, and Governor of Jersey, till 1540, when he was sent Ambassador to Paris, to settle some disputes as to the boundary of the English territory in France. On his return, in the beginning of the following year, he received the Order of the Garter, and in 1542 was, appointed Lord Great Chamberlain of England for life. In the mean time the King had sought to gratify his passion for military fame by giving him a command in the forces not long before sent into Scotland, under the Duke of Norfolk, in which he acquitted himself so well that on the declaration of war against the Scots in 1544 the first of the three divisions of the powerful army then dispatched into that country was intrusted wholly to his charge, together with the important office of Lieutenant General of the North. At home new marks of favour and confidence awaited him. Henry, who this year crossed the channel to the siege of Boulogne, named him one of the four counsellors by whose advice the Queen was to be directed, and commander in chief on any

occasions of military service which might occur during his absence. Amidst these ample engagements he pined for warlike enterprize, obtained the King's permission to join him before Boulogne, and distinguished himself there by the most signal skill and bravery in several actions after the reduction of the town, as well as by the sagacity which he displayed in the treaty of peace with Francis which presently followed. On his return from France he was elected Chancellor of the University of Cambridge, and Henry, who died soon after, included him in the number of his executors, to whom, in the nature of a Council of Regency, he intrusted the guardianship of his son.

One of the first acts of that Council was to invest him with the supreme government, and the title of Protector of the realm, and Governor of the King's person; and one of the first purposes to which he applied his authority was to use the King's name in advancing himself to the dignity of Duke of Somerset. To remove the imputation of vanity so likely to attend such a step a curious expedient was devised. Some other eminent persons were at the same time raised to the Peerage, and others promoted in it, and each individually testified for all the rest that it was the declared intention of the late King to have bestowed on them the titles now conferred, which was done therefore but in obedience to his pleasure. The Protector assumed also, about the same time, the great office of Earl Marshal, for life.

Edward's reign commenced with a war against the Scots. A treaty for his marriage to their infant Queen had been earnestly agitated by Henry, who on his death-bed commanded that it should be carried on with all assiduity, and the Protector zealously resumed it, but was baffled by delays and evasions. Any pretext for an invasion of that country was in those days welcome. Twenty thousand men, admirably equipped, were marched into Scotland by Somerset in person, and gained a complete victory in the sanguinary and decisive battle of Musselborough, almost without loss. His return was hailed with marks of respect and

love, amounting almost to adoration. Charmed by the feeble voice of the multitude, it was perhaps now that he conceived an unreasonable affection to popularity, and fondly sought to strengthen his authority by resting it on the ever doubtful basis of public esteem.

His vain endeavours to this end produced universal disgust. To ingratiate himself with the nobility, who as yet held the spoils of the ancient church but by a precarious tenure, he applied himself with vigour to destroy every vestige of its practice. Shortly after his arrival from Scotland he issued injunctions for the removal from churches of all images, and other visible objects of worship, and dispatched commissioners into every part of the kingdom to enforce the execution. The commonalty with whom the march of the reformation had been more tardy, perhaps because it administered nothing to their temporal interests, highly resented this harsh and sudden subversion of their inveterate habits, which even Henry for the time had left undisturbed. On the other hand, he attempted to win the mass of the people by an ordinance as summary and unexpected, not only prohibiting the inclosure of commons, and waste lands, but charging those who had already made inclosures to lay them again open. It is needless to say that such persons were almost wholly of the higher order, and it will readily be conceived that they considered this regulation as a heinous injury. A fever of discontent presently raged throughout the realm. Insurrections burst forth in several counties on the score of religion. In others the people, impatient of the delay and unwillingness with which the inclosers restored to them a property their right to which had now required a new guarantee, rose in thousands, and having broken down the fences which had debarred them, proceeded, according to the invariable practice of mobs, to spoil the mansions and the goods of the offenders. In the mean time a powerful party was secretly formed against him in the Court.

DUKE OF SOMERSET.

At the head of this faction was his brother, 'Thomas Lord Seymour, of Sudeley, whom he had advanced at the commencement of Edward's reign to that dignity, and to the office of Lord Admiral of England. The conduct of that nobleman towards the Protector, and its motives, and the lenity, and even tenderness, which he experienced to the last at the hands of his injured brother, may be found treated of at large in this work, in a memoir appropriated to himself. The Admiral, after long delays, was put to death for repeated treasons, but a more formidable adversary presently appeared. John Dudley, Earl of Warwick, a man of considerable talents, and equally ambitious and intrepid, was the Protector's secret enemy, and, from motives as well of anger as of envy, had determined to accomplish his ruin. Somerset, to gratify his brother, had deprived Warwick of the great office of Lord Admiral, which he had filled with abundant credit during the five concluding years of the late reign, and the offence was never forgiven. Warwick, however, dissembled till after the fall of Lord Seymour. He had privately encouraged that nobleman in his practices against the Protector, whom, on the other hand, he urged to resent them to the utmost. A majority of the Privy Council was now united against Somerset, and Warwick eagerly undertook to be their leader; they seceded suddenly from the main body, assuming the authority of the whole, and indeed the government of the realm; and this step was concerted with such secrecy that the Protector seems to have been wholly unapprized of its approach. They humbly averred to the King, and indeed not untruly, that his uncle had on most occasions contemned their advice, and issued a proclamation to the same effect. Somerset abandoned his authority with pusillanimous precipitation. Articles of accusation were drawn up, and he acknowledged the justice of them on his knees at the Council table. He then signed a confession to the same purpose, which was presented to the Parliament, and that assembly, having first examined him by a committee, stripped him of all his offices,

and, by way of fine, of estates to the annual value of two thousand pounds. Here his prosecution ceased for the time, he was released from the Tower, where he had suffered a very short imprisonment; and was soon after discharged of his fine. These matters occurred in the winter of 1549.

The plenitude of power of which he had been deprived now passed into the hands of Warwick, who seemed to be fully appeased by the sacrifice. A personal reconciliation between them, apparently sincere, was wrought through the mediation of the amiable Edward, who even prevailed on Warwick to give his eldest son in marriage to one of Somerset's daughters. The Duke, who possessed most of the qualities which bestow comfort and ornament on private life, laid down, perhaps with little regret, a burthen which neither his talents nor his temper had well fitted him to support. but Warwick, by whose ambitious and ardent spirit such moderation was utterly inconceivable, and who had injured Somerset too deeply ever to forgive him, still suspected and hated him. Popular affection had in some degree attended the Duke in his retirement, and, though wholly forsaken by the powerful, and possessing none of the qualities of a demagogue, his influence was yet dreaded. Warwick, now Duke of Northumberland, at length determined to deprive him of life, and he was arrested on the sixteenth of October, 1551, together with several of his intimates and retainers, among whom some through purchased treachery, and others from careless imprudence, had divulged to the spies of Northumberland the facts on which his accusation was to be formed, and which were to be proved by no other than their own evidence.

Northumberland's utmost influence seems to have been exerted to induce the Privy Council, servile as it was, to consent that he should be brought to a trial on charges which any grand jury of later days would have rejected with horror and disdain. After repeated examinations, that process, however, took place on the first of the succeeding December, twenty-seven peers forming the

DUKE OF SOMERSET.

Court. It was alledged against him that he had meditated insurrections to subvert the Government, and had conspired to assassinate certain noblemen at a banquet in the house of the Lord Paget, and, incredible as it may seem, three of these, Northumberland, the Marquis of Northampton, and the Earl of Pembroke, had the effrontery to sit that day, among his judges. On the first class of charges he was indicted of high treason; on the second of felony, but no overt act tending to either was adduced, nor was any proof made but of some vague and uncertain speeches, uttered in the freedom of familiar conversation, neither was he allowed to confront the witnesses, for this wretched evidence was delivered in the form of written depositions. Spite of the vengeance of the prosecutor, and the gross partiality of the court, it should seem that he might have been saved by slight exertions on his own part of common prudence, but he made no defence; uttered no clear denial of the charges, nor did he except with firmness against the palpable irregularities of the process, but wasted his time in unmeaning apologies, and sought to move the compassion of his judges by such complaints as usually result from the depression produced by conscious demerit. In the end, he was acquitted of treason, but convicted of the felony, and condemned to die. He suffered on Tower Hill, on the twenty-second of January, N S with a deportment and a speech which had little in them to denote the man who had ruled kingdoms, and commanded armies, or to afford any clear inference either of his innocence or guilt.

The Protector was twice married. By his first lady, Catharine, daughter and coheir of Sir William Fillol, of Woodlands, in Dorsetshire, whom he repudiated, he had an only son, Edward. He married, secondly, Anne, daughter of Sir Edward Stanhope, of Rampton, in the county of Nottingham, to whose pride, insolence, intriguing spirit, and controul over his conduct, some writers have ascribed most of his misfortunes and errors. She brought him a numerous issue, of which Edward, the eldest son,

EDWARD SEYMOUR, DUKE OF SOMERSET

was appointed his heir, under a special intail, created by act of Parliament (the only son by the first marriage being about the same time disinherited, as well of the titles as of the estates), and from this second son descended that line of Dukes of Somerset which failed in 1750. He had also by his Duchess, Anne Stanhope, two younger sons, Henry, and another Edward, and six daughters, Anne, first married, as has been already stated, to John Dudley, Earl of Warwick, eldest son to John, Duke of Northumberland, secondly, to Sir Edward Unton, of Wadley, in Oxfordshire, Knight of the Bath; Margaret, and Jane, who died unmarried, as did the fifth daughter, Catherine, Mary, married, first, Andrew, eldest son to Sir Richard Rogers, of Bryanstone, in the county of Dorset, secondly, to Sir Henry Peyton, and Elizabeth, wife to Sir Richard Knightley, of Fawsley, in Northamptonshire. On the extinction, alluded to above, of the male line from the eldest son of this second marriage, the Dukedom reverted at length to the heir male of Edward, the disinherited son of the first, from whom the present Duke of Somerset is lineally descended. The public and private history of these family affairs, of which as much has been here stated as is consistent with the views of this work, is little known, and of great curiosity.

PORTRAITS
OF
Illustrious Personages
OF
GREAT BRITAIN.

ENGRAVED FROM
AUTHENTIC PICTURES IN THE GALLERIES OF THE NOBILITY
AND THE PUBLIC COLLECTIONS OF THE COUNTRY

WITH
BIOGRAPHICAL AND HISTORICAL MEMOIRS
OF THEIR LIVES AND ACTIONS,

BY
EDMUND LODGE, ESQ. F.S.A.

VOL II.

LONDON.
PRINTED FOR HARDING AND LEPARD.

1835

CONTENTS TO VOLUME II.

1. KING EDWARD THE SIXTH, - - HOLBEIN 1553
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Egremont, at Petworth.*

2. JOHN DUDLEY, DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND,
HOLBEIN 1553
From the Collection of Sir J S Sidney, Bart. at Penshurst

- 3 THOMAS HOWARD, DUKE OF NORFOLK, HOLBEIN 1554
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Norfolk, at
Norfolk House.*

4. LADY JANE GREY, - - - - 1554
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Stamford and Warrington, at Enville Hall*

- 5 HENRY GREY, DUKE OF SUFFOLK, MARK GERARD. 1554
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of Salis-
bury, at Hatfield*

- 6 JOHN RUSSELL, FIRST EARL OF BEDFORD, 1555
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
Woburn Abbey*

- 7 NICHOLAS RIDLEY, BISHOP OF LONDON, - 1555
*From the Original in the Collection of the Reverend Henry
Radley, D. D*

- 8 THOMAS CRANMER, ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY,
FLICK. 1556
From the Collection in the British Museum

- 9 EDWARD COURTENAY, EARL OF DEVONSHIRE,
SIR ANTONIO MORE 1556
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Bedford, at
Woburn Abbey*

- 10 CARDINAL POLE, - - - - - TITIAN. 1557
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable Lord Arundell,
of Wardour, at Wardour Castle*
- 11 MARY, QUEEN OF ENGLAND, - - - - - HOLBEIN. 1558
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of
Exeter, at Bughley House.*
- 12 WILLIAM, FIRST LORD PAGET, - - - - - HOLBEIN. 1563
*From the Collection of the Most Noble the Marquis of
Anglesea, at Beaudesert.*
- 13 EDWARD, FIRST LORD NORTH, - - - - - 1564
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Guldford, at Wroton Abbey*
- 14 HENRY STUART, LORD DARNLEY, KING OF SCOTLAND, - - - - - 1567
*From the Original in the Collection of the late Earl of
Seaforth, at Brahan Castle*
- 15 JAMES STUART, EARL OF MURRAY, REGENT
OF SCOTLAND, - - - - - 1570
From the Collection at Holyrood Palace, Edinburgh
- 16 JOHN KNOX, - - - - - 1572
From the Original in Holyrood Palace, Edinburgh
- 17 THOMAS HOWARD, FOURTH DUKE OF NORFOLK, 1572
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Norfolk, at
Arundel Castle*
18. WILLIAM POWLETT, MARQUIS OF WINCHESTER, - - - - - 1572
HOLBEIN
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Northumber-
land, at Northumberland House*
- 19 SIR WILLIAM MAITLAND, OF LETHINGTON, - - - - - 1573
*From the Collection of the Right Honourable the Earl of
Lauderdale, at Thimblestone Castle.*
20. JAMES HAMILTON, EARL OF ARRAN, DUKE OF
CHATELHERAULT, - - - - - KETEL 1574
*From the Collection of His Grace the Duke of Hamilton, at
Hamilton Palace*



Painted by H. T. Ryall

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH

OB. 1553

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HOLBEIN IN THE COLLECTION OF
THE RIGHT HON^{BLE} THE EARL OF LICHMOND

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH,

THE son of Henry the Eighth by Jane Seymour, was born at Hampton Court on the 12th of October, 1537, and died at Greenwich on the sixth of July, 1553.

The annals of this Prince present little more to our view than the strange events which attended the struggle between Seymour and Dudley for the possession of his person and authority. The bloody war with Scotland, and the dangerous insurrections which succeeded at home, occupied the ardent minds and employed the talents of those chiefs during the first two years of his reign, but the return of national peace gave birth to the bitterest discord between them, and their wisdom and bravery, which in the late public exigencies had shone resplendently in the council and in the field, presently sank into the contracted cunning and petty malice of factious politicians. The Protector sought to intrench himself in the strong hold of popular favour, and was perhaps the first English nobleman who endeavoured to derive power or security from that source. His antagonist, too proud and too artful to engage in an untried scheme, humiliating in its progress and uncertain in its event, threw himself into the arms of a body of discontented Nobles, lamenting the fallen dignity of the Crown, and the tarnished honour of their order. He proved successful. The Protector was accused of High Treason, and suffered on the scaffold, and the young King was transferred to Dudley, together with the regal power.

These circumstances, well known as they are, will be found to throw a new lustre on Edward's character. In this convulsed time, so adverse to every sort of improvement either in the morals, or less important accomplishments of the youthful Prince, under

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH.

the disadvantages of an irregular education, a slighted authority, and a sickly constitution, he made himself master of the most eminent qualifications. With an almost critical knowledge of the Greek and Latin languages, he understood and conversed in French, Spanish and Italian. He was well read in natural philosophy, astronomy, and logic. He imitated his father in searching into the conduct of public men in every part of his dominions, and kept a register in which he wrote the characters of such persons, even to the rank of Justices of the Peace. He was well-informed of the value and exchange of money. He is said to have been master of the theory of military arts, especially fortification; and was acquainted with all the ports in England, France, and Scotland, their depth of water, and their channels. His journal, recording the most material transactions of his reign from its very commencement, the original of which, written by his own hand, remains in the Cotton Library, proves a thirst for the knowledge not only of political affairs at home and of foreign relations, but of the laws of his realm, even to municipal and domestic regulations comparatively insignificant, which, at his age, was truly surprising. "This child," says the famous Cardan, who frequently conversed with him, "was so bred, had such parts, was of such expectation, that he looked like a miracle of a man; and in him was such an attempt of Nature, that not only England but the world had reason to lament his being so early snatched away."

With these great endowments, which too frequently produce haughty and ungracious manners, we find Edward mild, patient, beneficent, sincere, and affable; free from all the faults, and uniting all the perfections, of the sovereigns of his family who preceded or followed him. courageous and steady, but humane and just, bountiful, without profusion, pious, without bigotry; graced with a dignified simplicity of conduct in common affairs, which suited his rank as well as his years; and artlessly obeying the impulses of his perfect mind, in assuming, as occasions required,

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH.

the majesty of the Monarch, the gravity of the statesman, and the familiarity of the gentleman.

Such is the account invariably given of Edward the Sixth, derived from no blind respect for the memory of his father, whose death relieved his people from the scourge of tyranny, without hope of reward from himself, whose person never promised manhood; with no view of paying court to his successor, who abhorred him as an heretic, or to Elizabeth, whose title to the throne he had been in his dying moments persuaded to deny; but dictated solely by a just admiration of the charming qualities which so wonderfully distinguished him, and perfectly free from those motives to a base partiality, which too often guide the biographer's pen when he treats of the characters of Princes. Concerning his person, Sir John Hayward informs us that "he was in body beautiful, of a sweet aspect, and especially in his eyes, which seemed to have a starry liveliness and lustre in them"

This description is fully justified by the present copy of his portrait.

The Journal however kept by this regal child, which has been already slightly mentioned, is so highly illustrative of important parts of his character, and corroborates in so many instances the reports which we have derived from his eulogists, that it would be blameable to suffer these notices of him to go forth unaccompanied by a specimen at least of a document so extraordinary. We will take for this purpose, without any care of selection, his entries for the months of July and August, 1551, made when he was in his fourteenth year. -

JULY.

"1. Whereas certain Flemish ships, twelve sail in all, six tall men of war, looking for eighteen more men of war, went to Diep, as it was thought, to take Monsieur le Mareschal by the way, order was given that six ships, being before prepared, with four pinnaces and a brigandine, should go, both to conduct him, and also to defend if any thing should be attempted against England

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH.

the disadvantages of an irregular education, a slighted authority, and a sickly constitution, he made himself master of the most eminent qualifications. With an almost critical knowledge of the Greek and Latin languages, he understood and conversed in French, Spanish and Italian. He was well read in natural philosophy, astronomy, and logic. He imitated his father in searching into the conduct of public men in every part of his dominions, and kept a register in which he wrote the characters of such persons, even to the rank of Justices of the Peace. He was well-informed of the value and exchange of money. He is said to have been master of the theory of military arts, especially fortification; and was acquainted with all the ports in England, France, and Scotland, their depth of water, and their channels. His journal, recording the most material transactions of his reign from its very commencement, the original of which, written by his own hand, remains in the Cotton Library, proves a thirst for the knowledge not only of political affairs at home and of foreign relations, but of the laws of his realm, even to municipal and domestic regulations comparatively insignificant, which, at his age, was truly surprising. "This child," says the famous Cardan, who frequently conversed with him, "was so bled, had such parts, was of such expectation, that he looked like a miracle of a man; and in him was such an attempt of Nature, that not only England but the world had reason to lament his being so early snatched away."

With these great endowments, which too frequently produce haughty and ungracious manners, we find Edward mild, patient, beneficent, sincere, and affable; free from all the faults, and uniting all the perfections, of the sovereigns of his family who preceded or followed him. courageous and steady, but humane and just, bountiful, without profusion, pious, without bigotry, graced with a dignified simplicity of conduct in common affairs, which suited his rank as well as his years; and artlessly obeying the impulses of his perfect mind, in assuming, as occasions required,

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH.

the majesty of the Monarch, the gravity of the statesman, and the familiarity of the gentleman.

Such is the account invariably given of Edward the Sixth; derived from no blind respect for the memory of his father, whose death relieved his people from the scourge of tyranny, without hope of reward from himself, whose person never promised manhood; with no view of paying court to his successor, who abhorred him as an heretic, or to Elizabeth, whose title to the throne he had been in his dying moments persuaded to deny; but dictated solely by a just admiration of the charming qualities which so wonderfully distinguished him, and perfectly free from those motives to a base partiality, which too often guide the biographer's pen when he treats of the characters of Princes. Concerning his person, Sir John Hayward informs us that "he was in body beautiful, of a sweet aspect, and especially in his eyes, which seemed to have a starry liveliness and lustre in them."

This description is fully justified by the present copy of his portrait.

The Journal however kept by this royal child, which has been already slightly mentioned, is so highly illustrative of important parts of his character, and corroborates in so many instances the reports which we have derived from his eulogists, that it would be blameable to suffer these notices of him to go forth unaccompanied by a specimen at least of a document so extraordinary. We will take for this purpose, without any care of selection, his entries for the months of July and August, 1551, made when he was in his fourteenth year.

JULY.

"1. Whereas certain Flemish ships, twelve sail in all, six tall men of war, looking for eighteen more men of war, went to Diep, as it was thought, to take Monsieur le Mareschal by the way, order was given that six ships, being before prepared, with four pinnaces and a brigandine, should go, both to conduct him, and also to defend if any thing should be attempted against England

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH.

by carrying over the Lady Mary 2. A brigandine sent to Diep, to give knowledge to Monsieur le Mareschal of the Flemings coming, to whom all the Flemings vailed their bonnet. Also the French Ambassador was advertized, who answered that he thought him sure enough when he came into our streams, terming it so 2. There was a proclamation signed for shortening the

fall of the money to that day, in which it should be proclaimed and devised that it should be in all places of the realm within one day proclaimed. 3 The Lord Clinton and Cobham was

appointed to meet the French at Gravesend, and so to convey him to Duresme Place, where he should lie 4 I was banqueted by the Lord Clinton at Deptford, where I saw the Primrose and the May Willoughby launched. The Frenchmen landed at Rye, as some thought for fear of the Flemings, lying at the Land's End, chiefly because they saw our ships were let by the wind that they could not come out 6 Sir Peter Moutas, at Dover, was

commanded to come to Rye, to meet Monsieur le Mareschal, who so did, and after he had delivered my letters, written with mine own hand, and made my recommendations, he took order for horses and carts for Monsieur le Mareschal, in which he made such provision as was possible to be for the sudden 7 Mon-

sieur le Mareschal set forth from Rye, and in his journey Mr. Culpepper, and divers other gentlemen, and their men, to the number of 1000 Horse, well furnished, met him, and so brought him to Maidstone that night. 7. Removing to Westminster.

8. Monsieur le Mareschal came to Mr Baker's, where he was well feasted and banqueted 9 The same came to my

Lord Cobham's to dinner, and at night to Gravesend. Proclamation was made that a testourn should go at 9^d, and a groat at 3^d, in all places of the realm at once At this time came the sweat into London, which was more vehement than the old sweat, for if one took cold he died within three hours, and if he escaped it held him but nine hours, or ten at the most. also if he slept the first six hours, as he should be very desirous to do, then he

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH.

roved, and should die loving. 11. It grew so much, for in London the 10th day there died 100 in the liberties, and this day 120; and also one of my gentlemen, another of my grooms, fell sick and died, that I removed to Hampton Court, with very few with me. The same night came the Mareschal, who was saluted with all my ships being in the Thames, fifty and odd, all with shot well furnished, and so with the ordnance of the Tower. He was met by the Lord Clinton, Lord Admiral, with forty gentlemen, at Gravesend, and so brought to Duresme Place. 13. Because of the infection at London he came this day to Richmond, where he lay, with a great band of gentlemen, at least 400, as it was by divers esteemed, where that night he hunted."

"July 14. He came to me at Hampton Court at nine of the clock, being met by the Duke of Somerset at the wall-end, and so conveyed first to me, where, after his Master's recommendations and letters, he went to his chamber on the Queen's side, all hanged with cloth of Arras, and so was the hall, and all my lodging. He dined with me also. After dinner, being brought into an inner chamber, he told me he was come, not only for delivery of the Order, but also for to declare the great friendship the King his master bore me, which he desired I would think to be such to me as a father beareth to a son, or brother to brother; and although there were divers persuasions, as he thought, to dissuade me from the King his master's friendship, and witless men made divers rumours, yet he trusted I would not believe them. furthermore, that as good ministers on the frontiers do great good, so ill much harm; for which cause he desired no innovation should be made on things had been so long in controversy by hand-strokes, but rather by commissioners' talk. I answered him that I thanked him for his order, and also his love, &c. and I would shew love in all points. For rumours, they were not always to be believed; and that I did sometime provide for the worst, but never did any harm upon their hearing. For Ministers, I said, I would rather appease these controversies with

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH.

words than do any thing by force. So after, he was conveyed to Richmond again . 17. He came to present the Order of Monsieur Michaël, where, after with ceremonies accustomed he had put on the garments, he and Monsieur Gye, likewise of the Order, came, one at my right hand, the other at my left, to the Chapel; where, after the Communion celebrated, each of them kissed my cheek After that they dined with me, and talked after dinner, and saw some pastime, and so went home again ”

“ 18. A proclamation made against regrateis and forestalleis, and the words of the statute recited, with the punishment of the offenders Also letters were sent to all officers and 'sheriffs for the executing thereof. 19. Another proclamation made for punishment of them that would blow rumours of abasing and enhancing of the coin, to make things dear withal The same night Monsieur le Mareschal St Andrié supped with me . after supper saw a dozen courses; and, after, I came, and made me ready. 20, the next morning, he came to me to mine arraying, and saw my bedchamber, and went a hunting with hounds, and saw me shoot, and saw all my guards shoot together. He dined with me, heard me play on the lute, and; came to me to my study, supped with me, and so departed to Richmond.

19 The Scots sent an Ambassador hither for receiving the treaty, sealed with the Great Seal of England, which was delivered him Also I sent Sir Thomas Chaloner, clerk of my council, to have the seal of them, for confirmation of the last treaty, at Northampton.

17. This day my Lord Marquess and the commissioners coming to treat of the marriage, offered, by later instructions, 600'000 crowns, after, 400'000', and so departed for an hour. Then, seeing they could get no better, came to the French offer of 200'000 crownes, half to be paid at the marriage, half six months after that Then the French agreed that her dote should be but 10'000 marks of lawful money of England Thirdly, it was agreed that if I died she should not have the dote, saying they did that for friendship's sake, without precedent. 19. The

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH.

Lord Marquess having received and delivered again the treaty, sealed, took his leave, and so did all the rest. At this time there was a bickering at Parma between the French and the Papists; for Monsieur de Thermes, Petro Strozzi, and Fontivello, with divers other gentlemen, to the number of thirty, with fifteen hundred soldiers, entered Parma. Gonzaga, with the Emperor's and Pope's band, lay near the town. The French made sallies, and overcame, slaying the Prince of Macedonia, and the Signor Baptista, the Popes nephew.

22. Mr Sidney made one of the four chief Gentlemen -

23. Monsieur le Mareschal came to me, declaring the King his master's well-taking my readiness to this treaty, and also how much his master was bent that way. He presented Monsieur Bois Dolphine to be Ambassador here, as my Lord Marquess the 19th day did present Mr. Pickering.

26. Monsieur le Mareschal dined with me: after dinner saw the strength of the English archers. After he had so done, at his departure I gave him a diamond from my finger, worth by estimation 150^l, both for pains, and also for my memory. Then he took his leave

27. He came to a hunting to tell me the news, and shew me the letter his master had sent him; and doubtless of Monsieur Termes' and Marignan's letters, being Ambassador with the Emperor.

28. Monsieur le Mareschal came to dinner in Hyde Park, where there was a fair house made for him, and he saw the coursing there. - 30. He came to the Earl of Warwick's; lay there one night, and was well received.

29. He had his reward, being worth 3000^l. in gold, of current money; Monsieur de Gye, 1000^l; Monsieur Chenault, 1000^l; Monsieur Movillier, 500^l; the Secretary, 500^l; and the Bishop of Peregrueux, 500^l."

AUGUST.

" 3. Monsieur le Mareschal departed to Bologna, and had certain of my ships to conduct him thither. 9. Four and twenty Lords of the Council met at Richmond, to commune of my sister Mary's matter; who at length agreed that it was not

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH.

meet to be suffered any longer, making thereof an instrument, signed with their hands, and sealed, to be on record. 11. The

Lord Marquess, with the most of his band, came home, and delivered the treaty sealed 12 Letters sent for Rochester,

Inglefield, and Walgrave, to come the 13th day, but they came not till another letter was sent to them the 13th day 14 My

Lord Marquess's reward was delivered at Paris, worth 500^l, my Lord of Ely's, 200^l, and Mr Hobbey's, 150^l, the rest, all about

one scantling Rochester, &c had commandment neither to hear, nor to suffer, any kind of service but the common and orders set

forth at large by Parliament; and had a letter to my Lady's house from my Council for their credit, another to herself from me

Also appointed that I should come and sit at Council when great matters were debating, or when I would This last month

Monsieur de Termes, with 500 Frenchmen, came to Parma, and entered safely afterwards, certain issued out of the town, and

were overthrowen, as Scipiaro, Dandelot, Petio, and others were taken, and some slain after, they gave a skirmish, entered the

camp of Gonzaga, and spoiled a few tents, and returned

15. Sir Robert Dudley and Barnabé sworn two of the six ordinary gentlemen The last month the Turks' navy won a little castle

in Sicily 17 Instructions sent to Sir James Croftes for divers purposes, whose copy is in the Secretary's hands. The Testoun

cried down from 9^d to 6^d, the groat from 3^d to 2^d, the 2^d to 1^d; the penny to an halfpenny, the halfpenny to a farthing, &c

1. Monsieur Termes and Scipiero overthrew three ensigns of horsemen at three times, took one dispatch sent from Don

Fernando to the Pope concerning this war, and another from the Pope to Don Fernando, discomfited four ensigns of footmen;

took the Count Camillo of Castillon; and slew a captain of the Spaniards. 22 Removing to Windsor. 23. Rochester, &c.

returned, denying to do openly the charge of the Lady Mary's house, for displeasing her 26. The Lord Chancellor, Mr.

Comptroller, the Secretary Petie, sent to do the same commission.

27. Mr. Coverdale made Bishop of Exeter. 28. Rochester, &c. sent to the Fleet. The Lord Chancellor, &c. did that they were commanded to do to my sister, and her house. 31 Rochester, &c. committed to the Tower. The Duke of Somerset, taking certain that began a new conspiracy for the destruction of the gentlemen at Okingham, two days past executed them with death for their offence. 29. Certain pinnaces were prepared to see that there should be no conveyance over-sea of the Lady Mary secretly done. Also appointed that the Lord Chancellor, Lord Chamberlain, the Vice-chamberlain, and the Secretary-Petre, should see by all means they could whether she used the Mass; and if she did, that the laws should be executed on her chaplains. Also that when I came from this progress to Hampton Court or Westminster, both my sisters should be with me till further order were taken for this purpose."

As no apology may perhaps be necessary either for the matter or the extent of these extracts, I will venture to close the tribute thus irregularly collected and devoted to the memory of this Prince with two additional documents of some curiosity; the first, a paper addressed to some unknown person, all written with his own hand, with which I have been just now favoured by an ingenious friend, who transcribed it from the original in the Ashmolean collection at Oxford. It is clear that it may be referred to the great and tragical discord between the Protector and his brother, and that the innocent Edward, then but at the age of ten years, had been called on to disclose the matters adverse to the Protector which had passed in his conversations with the Admiral, in order that they might be used as evidence against that nobleman. The connection of the paper with the history of Edward seems to confer some value on it, nor is it without marks of the premature sagacity which distinguished him

"S"

The Lord Admirall cam to me at the last p̃liament, and

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH.

desired me to wryght a thyng for him. I asked him what? He sayd it was non ille, 'it is for the Quene's maters.' I sayd if it were good the Loides wold allow it. if it were ill, I wol not wright in it. Then he sayd he wold take in better part if i wrought. I desired him to let me alon. I asked Chek whether it wer good to wright, and he sayd no. He sayd 'w'in this tow yere at lest ye must take upon yow to be as ye are, or ought to be, for ye shall be able, and then yow may give youi men somewhat, for your unkle is old, and i trust wil not live long.' I sayd it wer better for him to die befor. He sayd 'ye ar a beggarly King. Ye have no mone to pay oi to geve' I sayd that M^r Stanhop had for me. Then he sayd that he wold geve Fouler; and Fouler did geve the monie to divers men as I bad him; as to Master Chek, and the bokbinder, and othei. He told me thes thinges oftentimes. Fouler desired me to geve thanks to my Lord Admirall for his gentilnes to me, and praised him to me verie much.

E. R

"In the moneth of September, An D. 1547, the Lord Admirall told me that min unkle, beeing gon into Scotland, shuld not passe the peesse w'out losse of men, a great number of men, oi of himself, and that he did spend much monie in vain. After the returne of min unkle he sayd that i was toe bashful in mi maters, and that I wold not speake for mi right. I sayd I was wel enoughe. When he went to his contré he desired me not to beleve men that wold sclaunder him till he cam himself.

E R."

The second is an extract from the original draft of a letter from the Loids of the council to the English Ambassador at the Court of the Emperor, which may be found among the Cecil Papers in the Illustrations of British History, &c disclosing some slight particulars of Edward's final disease, which seems to have not been elsewhere described otherwise than generally.

"After o' hrté comendations We must nede be sorry now to

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH.

write that which cometh both sorrowfully from us, and shall, we well knowe, w^t the like sorrowe be taken of yow; but, such is the almighty will of God in all his creations, that his ord^r in them may not be by us resisted. In one worde we must tell yow a greate heap of infelicité. God hathe called owte of this world o^r soveraigne Lord the vith of this moneth; whose man^r of dethe was such toward God as assureth us his sowle is in the place of eternall joye, as, for yo^r owne satisfaction p^{tly} ye may p^{ceve} by the cōpye of the words which he spake secretly to hym selfe at the momē^t of his dethe. The desease wh^rof his Ma^{ty} died was the desease of the longs, which had in them 11 grete ulcers, and were putrefied, by meanes wh^rof he fell into a consumption, and so hath he wasted, being utterly incurable. Of this evill, for the ēportance, we adv^{tise} you, knowing it most comfortable to have bene ignorant of it, and the same ye maye take tyme to declare unto the Emp^{or} as from us," &c.



Engraved by Tho Wright

JOHN DUDLEY, DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND

OB 1553

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HOBBIN IN THE COLLECTION OF

SIR JOHN SHILLITY SIDNEY BART

JOHN DUDLEY,

DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND.

TYRANNY and faction are the alternate followers, if not the necessary consequences of each other. The furious and fearless spirit of Henry the eighth had awed into inactivity those contending passions which under his inexperienced successor burst forth therefore with increased violence. Hence the six years of the amiable and beneficent Edward were stained even perhaps by more enormities than had disgraced the long reign of his barbarous father, for that philosophy of faction, if the expression may be allowed, which in our day bestows impunity on the leaders, and transfers the penalties to the innocent community, was then unknown, and every political contest ended in the bloodshed of some of its authors. The minority of the Monarch, the rich spoils of the reformation, and the confusion in which Henry had left the succession to the throne, presented to the minds of the ambitious the most extravagant visions of power. The subject of the present memoir chose the last as the means of increasing a grandeur already too lofty, and by failing in the attempt forfeited his life, and acquired an eminent station in history, without exciting either pity or respect.

He was born in the year 1502, and his infancy was marked by the most unfavourable circumstances. His father, Edmund Dudley, a descendant from the ancient Barons Dudley, was one of the two chief ministers to the advance of Henry the seventh, and was put to death, together with his colleague, Empson, in the first year of the succeeding reign. It has been said that there was more of policy than justice in this act of severity, and the restoration in blood of the son a very few months after favours

JOHN DUDLEY

that opinion. The influence however of his mother, Elizabeth, who was a coheir of the Greys, Viscounts Lisle, a title which was afterwards revived in her second husband, Arthur Plantagenet, perhaps did much towards procuring that grace. By her, who was equally illustrious for her high birth and eminent virtues, he was brought to the court about the year 1523, in the autumn of which he attended Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, in his expedition into France, and was knighted for his gallant conduct there. On his return he attracted the notice of Wolsey, whom he accompanied on his embassy to Paris in 1528, and through whose favour he obtained the office of Master of the Armoury in the Tower, and on the fall of that minister attached himself to Cromwell, who, after the marriage, so fatal to himself, of Henry the eighth to Anne of Cleve, procured for him the appointment of Master of the Horse to that Princess. Such were the insignificant steps which this extraordinary person first mounted on his progress towards almost unlimited power.

He was one of the handsomest men of his time, excelled in military exercises; and was peculiarly distinguished by his adroitness and rich equipment in tournaments. Henry, till he arrived at middle age, generally selected his favourites from such persons, and those qualifications, perhaps, first recommended Dudley to his good graces. Hitherto undistinguished, but in the inauspicious stations of a retainer to two disgraced ministers, and a servant in the household of a detested Queen, the King suddenly took him into the highest favour, bestowed on him in 1542, on the death of his father-in-law, the dignity of Viscount Lisle, and, immediately after, the Order of the Garter, and the office of High Admiral of England for life. He commanded, in that capacity, in the succeeding year, a formidable expedition to the coasts of Scotland, in which he seems, Lord Herbert only having left a hint to the contrary, to have been completely successful, as well in the military as in the naval part of his commission, for he commanded the vanguard of the army which had

DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND

sailed in his fleet. This service performed, he instantly embarked for Boulogne, then besieged by the King in person, assisted considerably in the reduction of the place, and was appointed governor of it. Henry, however, had further views in selecting him for that office. He had discovered in Dudley's mind a quick and penetrating judgment, united to that gallant courage which he so much admired. He knew that France was then secretly straining every nerve to equip a fleet for the invasion of England, and it was of the utmost importance to him to place such a man at a point equally apt for observation, and for active service. The consequence fully proved the sagacity of his arrangement. The French force suddenly put to sea, and Dudley, with a fleet much inferior, not only effectually repulsed it, but attacked, in his turn, the enemy's coast, and destroyed the town of Trepot, and several adjacent villages in Normandy. These circumstances led to the treaty of peace with Francis the first of the seventh of June 1545, for the ratification of which he was appointed a commissioner.

Henry, who survived that event not many months, constituted him one of the sixteen executors to his will, and those eminent persons were invested by him also with the guardianship of the young Edward. The Earl of Hertford, soon after Duke of Somerset, who was the King's maternal uncle, prevailed however on the majority of them to declare him Protector, and here, though Dudley made no open opposition to the appointment, originated the enmity between those two great men. One of the Protector's first acts was to bestow on his brother, Thomas, Lord Seymour, the post of High Admiral, which had been held with so much credit by Dudley, and which he was now compelled to relinquish, under the shew of a voluntary resignation. It is true that he received magnificent compensations, for on the very day that the patent was passed to his successor, the seventeenth of February, 1547, he was appointed Great Chamberlain of England, and created Earl of Warwick, a title the dignity of

JOHN DUDLEY,

which was presently after highly enhanced by a gift from the Crown of the castle and manor of that town, to which were added grants of many other estates of great value, but the revocation of his commission of Admiral still rankled in his bosom. He endeavoured to conceal his disgust from Somerset, and the Protector, on his part, affected not to perceive it. Their characters were dissimilar, even to positive opposition, but they were necessary to each other. The Protector, with many admirable talents for a statesman in more composed times, was mild, timid, and irresolute; Warwick was active and courageous, sudden, and seldom erroneous in judgment, and always prompt in execution. Somerset had already risen to the highest exaltation, but felt his inability to maintain himself there by his own resources, while Warwick, on whom the prospect of his own future deceitful glory had not yet opened, sullenly determined to place himself for a time on that heavy but powerful wing which he was not at present able to clip. While he acted however with the Protector, he served him with zeal and fidelity. He commanded the English army in Scotland under Somerset, in the quality of his Lieutenant-General, and the signal victory of Musselborough has been ascribed by those of our historians who wrote nearest to his time, to his conduct and courage, and signalized himself immediately after as a statesman in a negotiation at Paris, where he dexterously contrived at once to reject steadily the demand by the French king of Boulogne, and to avert the conflict which was expected to follow that refusal. In the mean time the Protector's government assumed a more despotic form, and many of his measures were unfortunate. The war in Scotland, which it is said would have occupied only the campaign of 1547 had the vigorous plan suggested by Warwick been adopted, was feebly and expensively managed, strange feuds occurred between Somerset and his brother, which ended in the Admiral's attainder and execution; the people became discontented, and at length broke out into a formidable insurrection, in many parts of the kingdom. Warwick

DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND.

was sent against them in Norfolk, at the head of an army which had been raised to serve in Scotland ; defeated them in a general action ; prevailed on them to give up their leaders ; and treated the rest with a mildness which would have done honour to a more civilized age.

Hitherto this great man had preserved a noble character, but irresistible temptations were at hand. The Lords of the King's guardian council, to whom the Protector had of late allowed little share in the government of the State, became indignant, and conspired to divest him of his authority. Warwick possessed all the talents, as well as the temper, for the leader of such a band, and fell, as it were naturally, into that station. The Protector was imprisoned, and the Earl took his place in the favour and confidence of the King, which he soon after effectually fixed by releasing Somerset, whom Edward sincerely loved, from the Tower, and consenting, at the request of that Prince, to the marriage of his heir to the daughter of his fallen adversary, which was solemnized in the King's presence on the third of June, 1550. About the same time his office of High Admiral was restored to him ; he resigned the place of Lord Great Chamberlain, and accepted that of Steward of the Royal Household ; was soon after appointed Earl Marshal ; and on the eleventh of October, 1551, was raised to the dignity of Duke of Northumberland. Within very few days after, Somerset was suddenly accused of an intention to murder him, and on the first of December following was brought to a trial by his Peers. The mysterious circumstances of his case, on which our historians are much disagreed, will be mentioned somewhat at large in their proper place in this work. Suffice it therefore to say here that he was convicted of felony, and on the twenty-second of the succeeding month was beheaded. In considering of this sanguinary catastrophe, and of the steps which led to it, it is difficult to believe that Northumberland was wholly innocent, but impossible either to say that he was guilty, or to guess at the probable measure of his guilt. Perhaps the

JOHN DUDLEY,

strongest presumption to be urged in his favour, inasmuch as it tends to strengthen the opinion that Somerset was fairly charged with the crime for which he suffered, may be founded on the fact that the just, acute, and affectionate Edward made no effort to save his uncle's life, nor does he, in his Journal, that most curious historical collection, express any regret for the Protector's awful fate

Northumberland now rose to the possession of absolute dominion. The King submitted himself wholly to his direction, and the Nobility, variously swayed, by affection, interest, or fear, were divided into humble agents of his government, and silent spectators of his grandeur. At this remarkable juncture Edward's health suddenly declined, and his recovery presently became hopeless. Northumberland, who could scarcely indulge the reasonable hope even of an humble and obscure impunity under a legitimate successor to the throne, conceived, with his usual boldness and impetuosity, the extravagant project of placing on it the grand-daughter of a sister of Henry the eighth, having first made her the wife of one of his sons. This was the admirable Jane Grey, who was married to the Lord Guildford Dudley, in May, 1553. Edward, always too compliant, and now worn out by sickness, was easily prevailed on to acknowledge her visionary right, and the Judges were bribed, cajoled, or threatened, till they submitted to draw letters patent for the disposal of the Crown to her, which the King signed on the twenty-first of June, fourteen days before his death. It would be impertinent and useless to enlarge here on great points of English history already so frequently and so minutely detailed. From the hour of the King's departure Northumberland's high spirit and presence of mind seem to have forsaken him. On the tenth of July he caused Jane to be proclaimed Queen, and placed her for security in the Tower. On the fourteenth, he left London, to try the temper of the country, and reached, at the head of a feeble force, the town of Bury St Edmunds. Discouraged by the indifference of the

DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND.

people, he returned to Cambridge, and there, on the twentieth of the same month, having heard of the defection of his pretended friends in London, he pusillanimously proclaimed Queen Mary, throwing his cap into the air, in token of his joy and loyalty. Henry Fitzalan, Earl of Arundel, arrived the next day with an order to arrest him, which he received with childish expressions of grief and contrition. He was conveyed to London, and, on the eighteenth of August, arraigned before his Peers, and condemned to die. Two days after, he wrote to the Earl of Arundel the following letter, which remains in the Harleian collection, a melancholy testimony of the truth of those historical relations which have been hitherto nearly incredible, of the utter abasement of spirit into which this great man fell under the reverse of his fortunes.

“Hon^{ble} L^d and in this my distress my especiall refuge, most wofull was y^e newes I receyved this eveninge by M^r. Lieutenant, that I must prepare my selfe ag^t. to morrowe to receyve my deadly stroke. Alas, my good L^d, is my crime so heynows as noe redemp^{cion} but my bloud can washe away y^e spottes thereof. An old proverbe there is, and yt is most true, y^t a lyving dogge is better than a dead lyon. Oh y^t it would please her good Grace to give me life, yea y^e life of a dogge, y^t I might but lyve, and kisse her feet, and spend both life, and all, in her hon^{able} services, as I have y^e best part allready under her worthy brother, & her most glorious father. Oh y^t her mercy were such as she would consyder how little proffitt my dead and dismembered body can bringe her, but how great and glorious an honor it will be in all posterityes, when y^e report shall be y^t soe gracious & mighty a Queen had graunted life to soe miserable & penitent an abject. Your hon^{ble} usage and promises to me since these my troubles have made me bold to challenge this kindness at your handes. Pardone me if I have done amiss therein, & spare not, I pray, your bended knees for me in this distresse. Y^e God of heaven, it may be, will requite it one day on you or your's, and,

JOHN DUDLEY,

if my life be lengthened by your mediac^on, & my good L^d. Chancellor's, to whom I have alsoe sent my blunied L^r, I will ever vowe it to be spent at your hon^rable feet. Oh, good my Lord, remember how sweet life is, & how bitter y^e contrary. Spare not your speeche and paines, for God I hope, hath not shutt out all hopes of comfort from me in y^e gracious, princely, and woman-like haite, but y^e as the dolefull newes of death hath wounded to death both my soule & bodye, so y^e comfortable newes of life shall be as a new resurreec^on to my wofull heart. But, if noe remedy can be founde, eyther by imprisonm^t, confiscation, banishm^t, and the like, I can say noe more but God grant me patyence to endure, and a heart to forgive, the whole world.

Once yo^r fellowe and lovinge companion, but now
worthy of noe name but wretchednes & misery

J D."

The next day, the twenty-second of August, 1553, he was brought out to suffer execution on Tower Hill, where he uttered a long speeche to the multitude, in the same strain of miserable humiliation. Fox, to blacken Mary and her government, informs us that he had a promise of pardon, "even if his head were on the block," which that address tended to contradict, and which indeed is fully refuted by the terms of his letter to Lord Arundel. It is true that, contrary to the profession of his life, he declared himself on the scaffold a son of the Romish Church, a very natural artifice at such a moment. He seems indeed to have been indifferent as to modes of faith, and perhaps to religion in general.

Dudley married Jane, daughter of Sir Edward, and sister and heir of Sir Henry Guldeford, or Guildford, as commonly called, by whom he had eight sons, and five daughters. Henry, the eldest, was killed at the siege of Boulogne, at the age of nineteen; Thomas, died an infant, John, who bore the title of Earl of Warwick, and died a few months after the death of his father; Ambrose, who was restored to that title by Queen Elizabeth;

DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND.

Robert, who became also in that reign Earl of Leicester, and the great favourite of that Princess, Guildford, who has been mentioned, and whom his father's ambition led to the scaffold, Henry, killed at the siege of St. Quintin's, in 1557, and Charles, who died in infancy. The daughters were Mary, wife of Sir Henry Sidney, and mother to the admirable Philip, Catherine, married to Henry Hastings, Earl of Huntingdon, Margaret, Temperance, and another Catherine, who died infants.



Engraved by Sir J. Smith

THOMAS HOWARD DUKE OF NORFOLK

OF 1551

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HOLBEIN IN THE COLLECTION OF

HIS GRACE THE DUKE OF NORFOLK

THOMAS HOWARD,

DUKE OF NORFOLK

THIS most exalted person, who was the eldest of the eight sons of Thomas, second Duke of Norfolk of his family, and Lord High Treasurer, by Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Sir Frederick Tylney, of Ashwellthorpe, in Norfolk, was created Earl of Surrey by patent, on the first of February, 1513, when his father was restored to the Dukedom, which had been forfeited by the attainder of John, the first Duke, on the accession of Henry the seventh. His first public service, at a very early age, was in the command of a ship of war in the force sent in 1511 against Sir Andrew Barton, whom most of our historians absurdly call "the famous Scottish pirate," and he had an eminent share in the naval victory in which that brave commander was killed. He soon after accompanied Thomas Grey, Marquis of Dorset, in his expedition into Spain against the French, and, the Marquis falling sick, had then the command of the English army. In 1513, upon the death of his younger brother, Sir Edward, he was appointed to succeed him as Lord Admiral of England, and immediately after, to use the words of a very honest historian, "so completely scoured the seas that not a fisher boat of the French durst venture out." That service performed, he landed in Scotland with the same troops which had been so successful at sea, for the military of that time acted indifferently in both duties, and sent a gallant and resolute defiance to the King of Scots, which Lord Herbert in his history has detailed at a length of which the limited nature of this work will not allow the repetition; nor was this a vain threat, for he commanded, together with his brother the Lord

THOMAS HOWARD,

Edmund, the vanguard at the battle of Floddon, and had an eminent share in the merit of the signal victory obtained there.

There is a chasm in his history from that date till 1521, when he was appointed Lord Deputy of Ireland. It has been said that he was placed in that arduous office to avoid the opposition which was expected from him to the prosecution of his father-in-law the Duke of Buckingham, whose ruin Henry and Wolsey had previously determined on. If this be true, the fact casts on his character all the lustre which ancient loyalty derived from a disregard of selfish interests and affections, for both his civil and military government in Ireland were eminently distinguished by their wisdom, vigilance, moderation, and activity; and having, with a dreadful but necessary severity, subdued the insurrection which on his arrival he found raging in almost every part of the island, he quitted it in January 1523, loaded with the gratitude and caresses of the civilized Irish, and leaving a Parliament then sitting, from the measures of which, under his auspices, they had obtained the most signal benefits. In the May following his return he was again at sea; escorted the Emperor Charles the fifth to this country; and was by that Monarch appointed Admiral of all his dominions. Under the authority of that commission he joined the ships of Flanders with the English fleet, and made a descent on the coast of Brittany, when he burned the town of Morlaix, and other places, and laid waste the French borders, and afterwards extended his irruption into Picardy.

On the fourth of the following December, upon his father's resignation, he was raised to the office of Lord Treasurer, and on the sixth of February received a commission as General-in-chief of the army then appointed to serve against the Scots, to which was secretly annexed the most ample confidence and power with regard to the political affairs of England with that country. He returned for a short time in the summer of 1524 to take possession of his dignities and estates, and resuming soon after

DUKE OF NORFOLK.

his charge in Scotland, accomplished the main object which Henry at that time had in view, by detaching the young King of Scots from the subjection in which he was held by the Regent, Duke of Albany, or, in other words, by placing him under the control of England. This service was rewarded by a grant of additional territory to his already immense domains.

The memorable fall of Wolsey, who had been his father's bitter enemy, happening soon after, he, together with Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, was commissioned to demand from that degraded favourite the great seal. It has been said that, on the Cardinal's reluctant delay to obey the King's subsequent order for his residence in his see of York, the Duke sent a message to him by Cromwell, threatening, on his longer stay, to "tear him with his teeth." This very improbable story rests, I believe, wholly on the account given by Stowe, whose honesty and simplicity occasionally misled him to give credit to very idle tales. All that we know with certainty of the Duke which has any relation to Wolsey, beyond the little which has been already related, is that his name appears among those of the Lords who signed the articles of impeachment against the Cardinal, and that Henry soon after granted to him the monastery of Felixtow in Suffolk, which was one of the many estates that had been allotted to the endowment of the colleges which that prelate was about to erect in Oxford and Ipswich.

He took a very active part in promoting the measure of Henry's divorce from Catherine; subscribed, with many other Peers, the bold declaration which on the first agitation of that great affair was sent to Rome, and which, in handsome terms, threatened the Holy See with Henry's assumption of the Supremacy in case of the Pope's opposition to it; and presided in several negotiations with that Pontiff and Francis I. The wisdom and stedfast fidelity with which those services, so very acceptable to the King, were performed, procured him new marks of favour, and he received from the Crown in 1534 a further

THOMAS HOWARD,

grant of estates, and in the same year was appointed to the exalted, and then most powerful, office of Earl Marshal of England, which had been, seemingly for that purpose, vacated by the resignation of the Duke of Suffolk. He was also in that year once more constituted Lord Deputy of Ireland.

In 1536 he was again sent Ambassador to Paris, to endeavour, through the mediation of Francis the first, to procure a reversal of the Pope's decree of censure against Henry on account of the divorce, and in the following year performed perhaps the most signal service to be found in the history of his long and various ministry, by subduing the insurgents in Yorkshire, who were headed by Robert Aske. He displayed on that occasion all the talents of an able general and an acute politician, for he was compelled by the superior force of his opponents to relinquish his military operations, and to have recourse to negotiation, and conducted himself in each capacity with such address that the insurrection was suppressed almost without bloodshed. It is worthy of remark, as it proves the unlimited confidence which Henry then reposed in this great man, that he was well known to favour all the religious and many of the civil, claims of the insurgents, and it would be difficult to find a parallel instance of the equal maintenance of loyalty and private principle under similar circumstances.

It was soon after this period that Henry's passion for the Lady Catherine Howard, and his consequent determination to repudiate Anne of Cleve, discovered themselves. Cromwell, who had made the match with Anne, instantly applied himself with all diligence to oppose both those dispositions, and the Duke, who already disliked him for the active part he had taken in the Reformation, naturally conceived the highest degree of resentment against the man who endeavoured to impede his niece's progress to the station of Queen Consort. On the thirteenth of June, 1540, he impeached Cromwell at the Council Board of high treason, and, six weeks after, that extraordinary man fell

DUKE OF NORFOLK.

a sacrifice to the caprice of his inhuman master, which in this instance was sustained by the jealousy of the nobility, and the prejudices of the people. On the twenty-ninth of January following that event the Duke was appointed Lieutenant General of all the King's forces beyond the river Trent, and, on the first of September, 1542, Captain General of the army in the North, at the head of which he ravaged the frontiers of Scotland in the succeeding March. He was soon after nominated commander of the rear, and then of the vanguard, of the English army in France, appointments which the peace that speedily followed rendered almost useless.

While he was engaged in these services the short-lived elevation of Queen Catherine was suddenly and tragically terminated, and the disgust which her frailty had excited in Henry's inexorable heart extended itself to her family. This motive aggravated the effect of jealousies already conceived on account of the Duke's professed attachment to the ancient religion, and of the immense power and wealth with which the King himself had so largely contributed to invest him. Henry decreed that all the influence of each would be applied to the re-establishment of that religion, and to the support of the right of succession, in his issue by Catherine of Arragon, and determined on his death-bed that the Duke, and his admirable son the Earl of Surrey, should not survive him. Even amidst the last struggles of expiring nature he held out temptations to any who would furnish evidence against these eminent persons, and, these endeavours proving fruitless, accused them of high treason merely on an inference drawn from their having quartered with the armorial ensigns of their family the royal arms of England, and those of Edward the Confessor. He accomplished, as is well known, his dreadful purpose with regard to the Earl, and the Duke escaped almost miraculously. Broken down by age, infirmity, and solitary imprisonment, he sought for mercy to his family by concessions and apologies, the effect of which was turned against himself.

THOMAS HOWARD,

He was prosecuted by a bill of attainder, which was hurried through both Houses of Henry's too obedient Parliament, and a warrant was dispatched on the twenty-ninth of January, 1547, for his execution; but the King died on the preceding night, and the Privy Council judged it unfit to stain the first days of the new reign with the best blood of the country.

The reformers, however, availed themselves with a secret joy of the pretexts against the Duke which Henry had bequeathed to them. He was kept a close prisoner in the Tower during the six years that Edward the sixth sat on the throne, and was not released till the third of August, 1553, the very day on which Mary made her public entry into London to take possession of the throne, when he was immediately restored, simply by her sovereign fiat, to his dignities and estates. The Parliament soon after confirmed this extraordinary mark of grace and power by an act of repeal of his attainder, in which, with an ill-merited complaisance to the memory of Henry, they laid on their predecessors all the blame of the Duke's persecution. At the end of a fortnight from his liberation, such were the sudden changes of fortune in those days, he presided as Lord High Steward on the trial of his bitter enemy John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland. In the following year he raised and equipped his tenants and dependents, and marched at their head against Sir Thomas Wyatt. It was the first public service in which he was unfortunate. They were wrought on by artful suggestions of the purity of the cause they had been called on to oppose to desert to the insurgents, and the Duke, now more than eighty years of age, at that period retired from all public concerns, and died at his seat at Kenninghall in Norfolk on the twenty-fifth of August, in the same year, 1554. He was buried at Framlingham in Suffolk, leaving, as appears by the inquisition taken after his death, notwithstanding the repeated spoils that his ancestors and himself had suffered, fifty-six manors, and thirty-seven advowsons, with many other considerable estates.

DUKE OF NORFOLK.

Thomas, third duke of Norfolk, married first, Anne, daughter of King Edward the fourth, who brought him one son, Thomas, who died young on the fourth of August, 1508, and was buried at Lambeth. Secondly, Elizabeth, daughter of Edward Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, by whom he had two sons, Henry, the celebrated Earl of Surrey, and Thomas, who in the first year of Elizabeth was created Viscount Howard of Bindon, in the county of Dorset; and one daughter, Mary, married to Henry Fitzroy, Duke of Richmond, a natural son to Henry the eighth.



Engraved by J. Thomson

LADY JANE GREY

OB. 1554

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLECTION OF

THE RIGHT HONORABLE THE MARQUESS OF SALISBURY AND WARRINGTON

THE LADY JANE GREY,

For it is perhaps more prudent to adopt the inveterate absurdity almost invariably used in this instance, of designating a married woman by her maiden surname, than to incur the charge of obscurity or affectation by giving her that of her husband. It is most difficult to guess in what motive this singular folly could have originated, more especially as her ephemeral greatness, and its tragical termination, the only important circumstances of her public history, arose out of the fact of her union with him. It is needless however, and perhaps nearly useless, to attempt to solve that difficulty, and on this question between common sense and propriety on the one hand, and obstinate habit on the other, I am content to take the wrong side.

This prodigy of natural and acquired talents, of innocence and sweetness of temper and manners, and of frightful and unmerited calamity, was born in 1537, the eldest of the three daughters of Henry Grey, Marquis of Dorset, by the Lady Frances, daughter of Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, and of his illustrious consort, Mary, Queen Dowager of France, and youngest sister of Henry the eighth. The story of her almost infancy were it not authenticated by several whose veracity was as unquestionable as their judgement would be wholly incredible. Her education, after the fashion of the time which extended the benefits and the delights of erudition to her sex, was of that character, and was conducted by John Aylmer, a protestant clergyman, whom her father entertained as his domestic chaplain, and who was afterwards raised by Elizabeth to the see of London. For this gentleman she cherished a solid esteem and

THE LADY JANE GREY.

respect, mixed with a childish affection which doubtless tended to forward the success of her studies. Those sentiments arose in some measure out of domestic circumstances. That elegant and profound scholar, and frequent tutor of royalty, Roger Ascham, informs us in his "Schoolmaster," that, making a visit of ceremony on his going abroad to her parents at their mansion of Broadgate in Leicestershire, he found her in her own apartment, reading the *Phædon* of Plato in the original, while her father and mother, with all their household, were hunting in the park. Ascham expressing his surprise that she should be absent from the party, she answered, to use his own words, "all their sport in the park I wisse is but a shadow to that pleasure that I find in Plato alas, good folk, they never knew what true pleasure meant." "And how," rejoined Ascham, "came you, Madam, to this deep knowledge of pleasure, and what did chiefly allure you to it, seeing not many women, but very few men, have attained thereto?" To this she replied, with a sweet simplicity, that God had blessed her by giving her sharp and severe parents, and a gentle schoolmaster, "for," added she, "when I am in the presence either of father or mother, whether I speak, keep silence, sit, stand, or go, eat, drink, be merry or sad, be sewing, dancing, or doing any thing else, I must do it, as it were, in such weight, measure, and number, even so perfectly as God made the world, or else I am sharply taunted, and cruelly threatened, till the time come that I must go to Mr. Aylmer, who teacheth me so gently, so pleasantly, with such fair allurements to learning, that I think all the time nothing whilst I am with him, and thus my book hath been so much my pleasure, and bringeth daily to me more pleasure and more, that in respect of it all other pleasures in very deed be but trifles and very troubles unto me."

Whether Ascham's first knowledge of her extraordinary attainments occurred at this period is unknown, but he certainly gave soon after the strongest proofs of the respect in which he held them. A long letter remains, perhaps one of many which he

THE LADY JANE GREY.

addressed to her, in which he declares his high opinion of her understanding as well as of her learning, and requests of her not only to answer him in Greek, but to write a letter in the same language to his friend John Sturmius, a scholar whose elegant latinity had procured him the title of "the Cicero of Germany," that he might have an indifferent witness to the truth of the report which he would make in that country of her qualifications. He speaks of her elsewhere with an actual enthusiasm. "Aristotle's praise of women," says he, "is perfected in her. She possesses good manners, prudence, and a love of labour. She possesses every talent, without the least weakness, of her sex. She speaks French and Italian as well as she does English. She writes elegantly, and with propriety. She has more than once spoken Greek to me; and writes in Latin with great strength of sentiment." Sir Thomas Chaloner, also her contemporary, not only corroborates Aseham's particulars of her erudite accomplishments, but adds that "she was well versed in Hebrew, Chaldee, and Arabic, that she excelled also in the various branches of ordinary feminine education, played well on instrumental music, sung exquisitely, wrote an elegant hand, and excelled in curious needlework, and, with all these rare endowments, was of a mild, humble, and modest spirit." Fuller, who lived a century after her, condensing, with the quaint eloquence which distinguished him, the fruit of all authorities regarding her with which he was acquainted, says that "she had the innocence of childhood, the beauty of youth, the solidity of middle, the gravity of old age, and all at eighteen, the birth of a princess, the learning of a clerk, the life of a saint, and the death of a malefactor for her parents' offences."

Her progress from this beautiful state of innocence and refinement to that dismal end was but as a single step, and the events relative to her which filled the short interval were matters rather of public than of personal history. By a marvellous fatality this admirable young creature was doomed to become the nominal

THE LADY JANE GREY.

head and actual slave of faction, and a victim to the most guilty ambition. The circumstances of the great contest for rule between the Protector Somerset and Dudley which distinguished the short reign of Edward the sixth will be found elsewhere largely treated of in this work. The latter, having effected the ruin of his antagonist, employed his first moments of leisure in devising the means of maintaining the vast but uncertain power which he had so acquired. Among these the most obvious, and perhaps the most hopeful, was the establishment of marriage contracts between his own numerous issue and the children of the most potent of the nobility, and thus, early in the year 1553, the Lady Jane Grey, for whose father he had lately procured the Dukedom of Suffolk, became the consort of his youngest son, Guildford Dudley. He was secretly prompted however to form this union by the conception of peculiar views, not less extravagant than splendid. Edward, the natural delicacy of whose frame never promised a long life, had shewn some symptoms of pulmonary disease, and the confusion and uncertainty which the brutal selfishness of his father Henry had entailed on the succession to the crown suggested to the ardent and unprincipled Northumberland the possibility of diverting it into his own family under such pretensions as might be founded on the descent of his daughter-in-law.

The absurdity of this reverie, legally or indeed rationally considered, was self-evident. Not to mention the existence of the Princesses Mary and Elizabeth, who might indeed plausibly enough be said to stand under some circumstances of disinclination, Jane descended from a younger sister of Henry, and there was issue in being from the elder, nay her own mother, through whom alone she could claim, was living, and the marriages both of her mother and her grandmother had been very fairly charged with illegality. Opposed to these disadvantages were the enormous power of the party which surrounded Northumberland, his own complete influence over the mind of the young King, and

THE LADY JANE GREY.

the affection which an agreement of age, talents, tempers, and studies, had produced in Edward towards his fair kinswoman, and which the Duke and his creatures used all practicable artifices to encrease. The nuptials were celebrated with great splendour in the royal palace, and the King's health presently after rapidly declined, insomuch that Northumberland saw no time was to be lost in proceeding to the consummation of his mighty project. Historians, with a licence too commonly used by them, affect to recite with much gravity the very arguments used by him to persuade Edward to nominate Jane his successor, of which it is utterly impossible that they should have been informed. All that can be truly said is that he gained his point to the utmost of his hopes and wishes.

The King was induced, apparently with little difficulty, to agree to certain articles, previously sanctioned by the Privy Council, declaring her next heir to the Crown, and, for some reason long since forgotten, but probably because it was expected that he would be the most pliable, Sir Edward Montague, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, was selected from the Judges, to digest and methodize them, with the aid of the Attorney and Solicitor General, into the strictest form that they could devise. Montague however, whose own account of his share in the transaction is extant, demurred. Having at first vainly endeavoured to withdraw himself entirely from the task, he sought to gain time, perhaps in expectation of the King's death, by beseeching to be allowed to consult the statutes, and all other authorities which might have any relation to so high a subject. Urged at length, with a vehemence no longer to be resisted, to proceed, he reported to the Council that the proposed measure was not only contrary to law, but would, if he were to obey their command, subject themselves, as well as him, to the penalties of high treason. Northumberland at that moment entered the council chamber in the utmost extravagance of fury; called Montague a traitor, swore that he would "fight any man in his shirt" who might gainsay the

THE LADY JANE GREY.

King's inclination ; and was actually about to strike the Chief Justice, and Bromley, the Attorney General They retired, and when they were next summoned, the King, being present, reproofed them sharply for delaying the duty required of them. At length over-awed, they consented, on condition of receiving an authority under the Great Seal, and a general pardon, and the instrument being prepared, the rest of the judges were required to attend, and to sign it, which was accordingly done by all, except one, Sir James Hales, a Justice of the Common Pleas, and a man otherwise unknown, who, to his endless honour, stedfastly refused to the last The Primate, Cranmer, with that unfortunate irresolution which formed the only distortion in the symmetry of his beautiful character, approved of Jane's succession, but objected to the mode of accomplishing it, contended, perhaps with more vigour than might have been expected of him, but in the end submitted, and signed, with the rest of the Council, not only the document which had been prepared by the lawyers, but also a second, by which they bound themselves in the strictest engagement on oath to support her title, and to prosecute with the utmost severity any one among them who might in any degree swerve from that obligation.

The Letters Patent, confirming to Jane the succession to the Throne, were signed by Edward on the twenty-first of June, 1553, and on the sixth of the next month he expired. Of these events, and even of the mere scheme for her fatal elevation, she is said to have been kept in perfect ignorance The King's death indeed was sedulously concealed from all for a few days, which Northumberland employed in endeavouring to secure the support of the city, and to get into his hands the Princess Mary, who was on her way to London when it occurred She was however warned of her danger, and retreated, asserted without delay her title to the Crown in a letter to the Privy Council, and received an answer full of disdain, and professions of firm allegiance to her unconseious competitor While these matters were passing

THE LADY JANE GREY.

Northumberland, and the Duke, her father, repaired to Jane, and having read to her the instrument which invested her with sovereignty, fell on their knees, and offered her their homage. Having somewhat recovered from the astonishment at first excited by the news, she intreated with the utmost earnestness and sincerity that she might not be made the instrument of such injustice to the right heirs, and insult to the kingdom, and that they would spare her, her husband, and themselves, from the terrible dangers in which it could not but involve them. Her arguments however were unavailing, and no means were left to her but a positive refusal, in which perhaps the strength of mind which she certainly possessed might have enabled her to persist, when the Duchess, her mother, and the young and inexperienced Guildford, were called in, and to their solicitations she yielded. She was now escorted in regal state to the Tower, on her entry into which it is remarkable that her train was borne by her mother, and in the afternoon of the same day, the tenth of July, was proclaimed in London with the usual solemnities.

In the mean time Mary, who had retired to Kenninghall in Norfolk, assumed the title of Queen, and found her cause warmly espoused by many of the nobility, and nearly the whole of the yeomanry and inferior population of that and the adjacent counties. Those who ruled in the metropolis, and who, having fondly considered her as a fugitive, had stationed some ships on those coasts to intercept her on her expected flight to Flanders, were now suddenly compelled to raise a military force to oppose to the hourly increasing multitude of her supporters. Eight thousand horse and foot were collected with surprising expedition, the command of which was assumed by Northumberland, and it was agreed that Suffolk should remain in London to conduct the government, an unlucky transposition, arising from Jane's anxiety for the personal safety of her father, whose best experience was in martial affairs, while Dudley, with all the arts of a statesman, possessed few of those qualities which win the hearts of

THE LADY JANE GREY.

soldiers, or bespeak success in the field. At the head however of this force he marched from London on the fourteenth of July, having taken leave of the Council in a short address from which his doubts of their fidelity may be clearly inferred. They were in fact at that moment agreed to betray the extravagant and unjust cause which they had so lately sworn to support. Even on the following day their intrigues became so evident that Suffolk, in the barrenness of political invention, commanded in the name of the Queen that the gates of the Tower should be kept constantly closed, to prevent the mischief which he apprehended from their communication with the adverse party. The Lord Treasurer with great difficulty procured egress for a few hours, and returned with the news that the naval squadron which had been equipped with the view of seizing the person of Mary had revolted to her, and letters were received from Northumberland pressing for reinforcements, and reporting the gradual defection of his troops on their march. The Council now affected the warmest zeal, and eagerly represented the impossibility of raising such succours otherwise than by their personal appearance among their tenants and dependants, most of them offering to lead to the field such forces as they might respectively raise. Suffolk, deceived by these professions, and by the earnestness of their dispatches to other powerful men in the country to the same effect, consented to release them from their imprisonment, for such it actually was. He did so, and they repaired, headed by the Earls of Shrewsbury and Pembroke, to Baynard's Castle, the house of the latter of those noblemen, who had but a few weeks before married his heir to a sister of the unfortunate Jane, where they determined to proclaim Queen Mary, which was done on the same day, the nineteenth of July, 1553.

Jane received from her father the news of her deposition with the patience, the sweetness, and the magnanimity, which belonged to her surprising character. She reminded him with gentleness of her unwillingness to assume this short lived elevation, and

THE LADY JANE GREY.

expressed her hope that it might in some measure extenuate the grievous fault which she had committed by accepting it, declared that her relinquishment of the regal character was the first voluntary act which she had performed since it was first proposed to raise her to it, and humbly prayed that the faults of others might be treated with lenity, in a charitable consideration of that disposition in herself. The weak and miserable Suffolk now hastened to join the council, and arrived in time to add his signature to a dispatch to Northumberland, requiring him to disband his troops, and submit himself to Queen Mary, which however he had done before the messenger arrived. Jane, whose royal palace had now become the prison of herself and her husband, saw, within very few days, its gates close also on her father, and on his. The termination of Northumberland's guilty career, which speedily followed, is well known, but Suffolk, for some reasons yet undiscovered, was spared. It has been supposed that his Duchess, who remained at liberty, and is said to have possessed some share of the Queen's favour, interceded successfully for him, and why may we not ascribe this forbearance to the clemency of Mary, in whose rule we find no instances of cruelty but those which originated in devout bigotry, a vice which while engaged in its own proper pursuits inevitably suspends the operation of all the charities of nature?

There is indeed little room to doubt that she meditated to extend her mercy to the innocent Jane and her youthful spouse. They were it is true arraigned and convicted of high treason on the third of November following the date of their offence, and sentenced to die, but the execution was delayed, and they were allowed several liberties and indulgences scarcely ever granted to state prisoners under their circumstances. The hopes however thus excited were cut short by the occurrence of Sir Thomas Wyatt's rebellion, in which her father, while the wax was scarcely cold on his pardon, madly and ungratefully became an active party, accompanied by his two brothers. Thus Mary saw already

THE LADY JANE GREY.

the great house of Grey once more publicly in array against her crown. The incentives to this insurrection are somewhat involved in mystery, and have been variously reported. The avowed pretence for it was an aversion to the Queen's proposed marriage with Philip of Spain, but there is strong reason to believe that with this motive was mixed, at least in the breasts of the leaders, a secret intention to re-assert the claim of Jane, and Bishop Cooper, a contemporary historian, tells us plainly in his Chronicle, that the Duke of Suffolk, "in divers places as he went, again proclaimed his daughter" Be this however as it might, it was *now resolved to put her to death without delay, and it is pretty well authenticated that the Queen confirmed that determination with much reluctance and regret.*

Jane received the news without discomposure, and became even anxious to receive the final blow, but here the bigotry of Mary interfered, and she commanded that no efforts should be spared to reconsecrate her to that church which arrogantly denies salvation to those who die not in its bosom. She suffered the importunities, and perhaps the harshness, of several of its most eminent ministers, with equal urbanity and firmness. At length she was left to Feckenham, Mary's favourite chaplain, and afterwards Abbot of Westminster, a priest who united to a steady but well-tempered zeal an acute understanding, and great sweetness of manners, and by him, according to the fashion of the day, she was invited to a disputation on the chief points of difference between the two churches. She told him that she could not spare the time, "that controversy might be fit for the living, but not for the dying, and intreated him, as the best proof of the compassion which he professed for her, to leave her to make her peace with God." He conceived from these expressions that she was unwilling to quit the world, and obtained for her a short reprieve, which when he communicated to her she assured him that he had misunderstood her, for that, far from desiring that her death might be delayed, "she expected, and wished for it, as the period

THE LADY JANE GREY.

of her miseries, and of her entrance into eternal happiness " He then led her into the proposed conference, in which she acquitted herself with a firmness, a power of argument, and presence of mind, truly astonishing. Unable to work the slightest impression, he left her, and she sat calmly down to make a minute of the substance of their discourse, which she signed, and which may be found in most of our ecclesiastical histories. She now addressed a farewell letter to her father, in which, with much mildness of expression, though certainly with less benignity of sentiment than is usually ascribed to her, she repeatedly glances at him as the author of her unhappy fate. She wrote also to her sister, the Lady Katherine Herbert, in the blank leaves of a Greek Testament, which she requested might be delivered as her legacy to that lady, an epistle in the same language, the translation of which, however frequently already published, ought not to be omitted here

" I have sent you, my dear sister Katherine, a book, which, although it be not outwardly trimmed with gold, or the curious embroidery of the artfullest needles, yet inwardly it is more worth than all the precious mines which the vast world can boast of. It is the book, my only best loved sister, of the law of the Lord. It is the testament and last will which he bequeathed unto us wretches and wretched sinners, which shall lead you to the path of eternal joy, and if you with a good mind read it, and with an earnest desire follow it, no doubt it shall bring you to an immortal and everlasting life. It will teach you to live and to die. It shall win you more, and endow you with greater felicity, than you should have gained by the possession of our woful father's lands, for as if God had prospered him you should have inherited his honours and manors, so, if you apply diligently this book, seeking to direct your life according to the rule of the same, you shall be an inheritor of such riches as neither the covetous shall withdraw from you, neither the thief shall steal, neither yet the moths corrupt. Desire, with David,

THE LADY JANE GREY.

my dear sister, to understand the law of the Lord thy God. Live still to die, that you by death may purchase eternal life; and trust not that the tenderness of your age shall lengthen your life, for unto God, when he calleth, all hours, times, and seasons, are alike, and blessed are they whose lamps are furnished when he cometh, for as soon will the Lord be glorified in the young as in the old. My good sister, once again more let me intreat thee to learn to die. Deny the world, defy the devil, and despise the flesh, and delight yourself only in the Lord. Be penitent for your sins, and yet despair not. Be strong in faith, yet presume not: and desire, with St Paul, to be dissolved, and to be with Christ, with whom even in death there is life. Be like the good servant, and even at midnight be waking, lest when death cometh, and stealeth upon you like a thief in the night, you be with the servants of darkness found sleeping, and lest for lack of oil you be found, like the five foolish virgins, or like him that had not on the wedding garment, and then you be cast into darkness, or banished from the marriage. Rejoice in Christ, as I trust you do, and, seeing you have the name of a Christian, as near as you can follow the steps, and be a true imitator of your master Christ Jesus, and take up your cross, lay your sins on his back, and always embrace him.

“ Now, as touching my death, rejoice as I do, my dearest sister, that I shall be delivered of this corruption, and put on incorruption, for I am assured that I shall for losing a mortal life win one that is immortal, joyful, and everlasting, to which I pray God grant you in his blessed hour, and send you his all-saving grace to live in his fear, and to die in the true christian faith, from which in God's name I exhort you that you never swerve, neither for hope of life nor fear of death, for, if you will deny his truth to give length to a weary and corrupt breath, God himself will deny you, and by vengeance make short what you by your soul's loss would prolong, but if you will cleave to him, he will stretch forth your days to an uncircumscribed comfort, and

THE LADY JANE GREY.

to his own glory ; to the which glory God bring me now, and you hereafter when it shall please him to call you. Farewell once again, my beloved sister, and put your only trust in God, who only must help you, Amen.

Your loving sister,

JANE DUDLEY."

This letter was written in the evening of the eleventh of February, 1554, N.S and on the following morning she was led to execution. Before she left her apartment she had beheld from a window the passage of her husband to the scaffold, and the return of his mangled corpse. She then sat down, and wrote in her tablets three short passages, in as many languages. The first, in Greek, is thus translated "If his slain body shall give testimony against me before men, his blessed soul shall render an eternal proof of my innocence before God." The second, from the Latin- "The justice of men took away his body, but the divine mercy has preserved his soul." The third was in English "If my fault deserved punishment, my youth and my imprudence were worthy of excuse ; God and posterity will shew me favour." This precious relique she gave to the Lieutenant of the Tower, Sir John Brydges, soon after created Lord Chandos. Endeavours had been incessantly used to gain her over to the Romish persuasion, and Feckenham embarrassed her by his exhortations even to the moment of her death, immediately before which, she took him by the hand, and thanked him courteously for his good meaning, but assured him that they had caused her more uneasiness than all the terrors of her approaching fate. Having addressed to those assembled about her a short speech, less remarkable for the matter which it contained than for the total absence even of an allusion to her attachment to the reformed church, she was put to death, fortunately by a single stroke of the axe.



1572-1573

HENRY GREY DUKE OF SUFFOLK

OR 1571

FROM THE ORIGIN OF MARK CHURCH IN THE COLLECTION OF

THE MOST NOBLE THE MARQUIS OF SALISBURY

HENRY GREY,

DUKE OF SUFFOLK.

THIS nobleman, who, by an inversion which rarely occurs in the history of a family, derived all his public importance from his offspring, was the eldest son and heir of Thomas Grey, second Marquis of Dorset, by Margaret, daughter of Sir Robert Wotton, of Bocton Malherbe, in Kent, and Relict of William Medley. The antiquity and splendor of his name and descent are so well known that it is unnecessary to speak of them : of his character and conduct, considering him individually, and as a free agent, we have scarcely any intelligence. "He was a man," says Sir John Hayward, in his *Life of Edward the sixth*, "for his harmless simplicity, neither disliked nor much regarded:" but he was the father of that distinguished example of universal excellence, Jane Grey, and it is chiefly on that ground that his memory can found any claim to historical recollection.

He had been at an early age contracted by his father to Catherine, eldest daughter to William Fitzalan, Earl of Arundel, whose heir and successor, Henry, Lord Maltravers, was at the same time espoused to his sister, the Lady Catherine Grey. The Marquis's marriage proved fruitless, and the vanity of forming an alliance with royalty suggested to him, soon after the death of his father, which happened in 1530, the iniquitous expedient of repudiating his innocent wife. The Lady Frances Brandon, daughter of Charles, Duke of Suffolk, by Mary, Queen Dowager of France, sister to Henry the eighth, encouraged his addresses ; and, as that Despot approved of their union, it is almost needless to say that the divorce was accomplished without difficulty. He married Frances Brandon, and had by her three daughters, of whom Jane was the first-born.

HENRY GREY,

He had been admitted into the number of the early companions and intimates of Henry, and is said to have been brave and generous, perhaps in other words, daring in tournaments, and careless of expense in his equipments for them, and for other gorgeous gallantries of the Court. He left it however soon after his second marriage, and retired unambitiously to his great estates, where he remained for many years in a magnificent privacy, occupied in the usual sports and hospitalities of the country, and in the indulgence, as we are told by one author, of some taste for letters, a report which derives additional credit from the extensively learned education bestowed on his children, so remarkably exemplified in that of Jane. The circumstances which withdrew him from this honourable and happy retirement have been so fully stated in a sketch of the life of that lady, already given in this work, that it would be impertinent here to do much more than refer to them, and his own subsequent story will present little more than the barren detail of the conduct of a mere instrument in the hands of another. It will be seen there that Dudley, having pulled down his great antagonist the Protector Somerset, and gained possession of the person and mind of the youthful and declining Edward, conceived the extravagant idea of availing himself of Somerset's royal marriage as a means to seize on the Crown. When in 1551 he procured for himself the Dukedom of Northumberland, he obtained for the Marquis that of Suffolk, and used all other artifices to attach him to his interest. Suffolk however was not yet gained over, for when, at the close of the same year, the Protector was tried by his Peers on charges of high treason, the most material of which was an alledged design to kill Dudley, after the trial, "the Lords," to use again the words of Hayward, "went together, and first the Duke of Suffolk nobly said that he held it not reasonable that, this being but a contention between private subjects, under pretension thereof any mean action should be drawn to intention of treason." Northumberland carefully concealed the vexation which he suffered from

DUKE OF SUFFOLK.

this opposition ; Suffolk was presently gratified with the office of Justice in Eyre of all the King's Forests ; and soon after appointed Lord Warden of the east, west, and middle Marches towards Scotland.

It was about this time that Northumberland proposed to him the marriage of his third son, Lord Guildford Dudley, with the ill-fated Jane, and met with a ready acquiescence. Edward, who was evidently sinking under an incurable malady, was prevailed on to nominate her as his successor to the CROWN, which only the earnest solicitations of her family induced her most unwillingly to accept. In the mean time the vigilance of Mary's friends, and the sudden defection of several of the most powerful of Northumberland's party, left Suffolk barely time for the empty ceremonies of swearing allegiance, and doing homage, to the ephemeral regality of his daughter. He feebly affected for a few days to direct the measures of her government, while his more guilty coadjutor marched, at the head of an army, to meet the adherents of Mary in the field, but to submit to them with the most abject meanness. Suffolk, on receiving the news, followed his example in London, and having first stripped his daughter of the ensigns of royalty, joined the Privy Council, which had declared for Mary, in their expressions of loyalty to her. This artifice however, if such it may deserve to be called, proved too shallow. He was arrested, and imprisoned in the Tower, where Jane and her husband were already imprisoned, and after a short confinement, was released without trial or penalty, for reasons which historians have in vain endeavoured to discover.

The fate of his family at this period rested on the prudence of his conduct. Justice, and even vengeance, if it was entertained in the bosom of Mary, had been satisfied by the sacrifice of Northumberland, and of several of his associates. The rigours of the imprisonment of Jane and Guildford Dudley had been gradually relaxed, and the execution of their sentence of death more than once formally respited. Mary was known to have

HENRY GREY, DUKE OF SUFFOLK.

betrayed an inclination to spare them. In this critical, hour when a mere passiveness on his part seemed to promise the happiest effects, Suffolk, without men, without money, without any apparent object, not only rushed wildly, with two of his brothers, into Sir Thomas Wyatt's rebellion, but on his way to the quarters of the insurgents, again proclaimed his daughter Queen in the towns through which he passed. A new scene of blood was now opened. Jane and her husband were presently led to the scaffold, and the Duke, who seems not to have reached his destination, was betrayed by one of his servants to the Earl of Huntingdon, who had been sent to arrest him at the head of a strong body of horse. He was brought by that nobleman to London on the eleventh of February, 1554, and lodged in the Tower, and on the twenty-third of the same month was beheaded.

It has been already observed that this Duke had, in addition to Jane, two younger daughters; they were Catherine, wife first of Henry Herbert, Earl of Pembroke, from whom she was divorced, and secondly of Edward Seymour, Earl of Hertford; and Mary, most meanly married to Martin Keys, groom porter at the Court.



JOHN RUSSELL EARL OF BEDFORD

OB 1691

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLECTION OF

HIS GRACE THE DUKE OF BEDFORD

JOHN RUSSELL,

FIRST EARL OF BEDFORD.

WE have here the founder of that immense fortune, and the first bearer of most of those exalted dignities, which still distinguish his posterity. He sprung however from no mean origin. His ancestors had been for nearly four centuries in the first rank of English gentry, holding of the Crown, in the County of Dorset, a Baronial estate, which, on the failure of the elder line of the family, devolved on that from which he descended. Several of them had held municipal appointments of considerable trust and honour; others had sat in the House of Commons, and his grandfather, Sir John Russell, filled the office of Speaker early in the reign of Henry the Sixth. He was the eldest son of James Russell, of Kingston; the estate above alluded to (son and heir of that Sir John) by his first wife, Alice, daughter and heir of John Wyse, a gentleman of that county.

He owed his introduction at the Court of Henry the seventh to a mere accident. Philip, Archduke of Austria, and King of Castile, say our historians, having been shipwrecked in January 1505, at Weymouth, whither he was driven by a great storm, on his passage from Flanders to Spain, was entertained by Sir Thomas Trenchard, one of the chief persons of that part of Dorsetshire, in whose house he lived splendidly, till Henry had received the news of his arrival, and invited him to the Court. It chanced that Sir Thomas sent for his cousin, Mr Russell, then lately returned from his travels, with great fame, as Dugdale informs us, for his skill in foreign languages, to wait on the royal stranger, who was so much pleased by the conversation of his visitor, that he took the young man in his company to Windsor,

JOHN RUSSELL,

recommended him strongly to Henry, and thus opened the way to his future fortune. It should seem, however, from certain historical circumstances which it is needless to state here, that the hospitable entertainment of the Austrian Prince in Dorsetshire was in reality nothing less than an honourable captivity, that Trenchard might be considered rather as his gaoler than his host, and that Russell was appointed to watch him on the way to London, and to deliver his person safely to the King, a service very likely to please a Prince of Henry's character. Whether these conjectures be well or ill founded, it is certain that Mr. Russell made his first appearance at Court on that occasion, and that the King immediately appointed him a gentleman of the Privy Chamber, and distinguished him from his fellows by a more than ordinary degree of kindness.

Henry the Eighth, who succeeded to the throne about four years after this event, received him with increased favour. They were about the same age, and Russell possessed most of the qualities which usually attracted, however seldom they might secure, that Prince's favourable notice—a sedate and clear understanding, a courageous heart, and a learned education, finished and polished by foreign travel. We find him in that remarkable selection of youthful gallantry made by the King in 1513, to grace his invasion of France, where during the siege of Therouenne, Russell, with two hundred and fifty men, recovered a piece of ordnance from ten thousand French, under the command of one of their ablest generals, and afterwards, with singular bravery, cut off a large supply of provisions which the enemy had sent towards the town. The latter of these services was so eminently distinguished, that our old chronicles have affected to preserve the very terms of a dialogue on it, between him and the King, who, when he saw him after his return from performing it, believed that he had not yet set out. "I," cried Henry, "while we are fooling the town is relieved." "So it is indeed," answered the other, "for I have sent them two thousand carcasses, and they

FIRST EARL OF BEDFORD.

have spared me twelve hundred waggons of provision." "I, but," said the King, "I sent after you to cut off the bridge Dreban." "That," replied Russell, "was the first thing I did, wherefore I am upon my knees for your Majesty's grace and pardon." "Nay then," concluded the King, "by'r Lady thou hast not my pardon only, but my favour too." He was not less active at the siege of Tournay, was one of Henry's commissioners in 1518 for the restoration of that strong city to France, and in 1522, sailed again to the French coast, in that expedition which was commanded by the Earl of Surrey as Admiral, when he received knighthood from that Nobleman for his good service at the sacking of Morlaix.

In 1523 he was first invested with the ministerial character; sent Ambassador to Rome, and from thence, with great secrecy, even, says Lord Herbert, "in disguised habit," to Charles Duke of Bourbon, to foment the difference then subsisting between that Prince and the King of France. He prevailed on the Duke to join openly the alliance between Henry and the Emperor, and was personally engaged in most of the warlike enterprises which followed that junction. In 1525 he fought at the celebrated battle of Pavia, in 1532 attended Henry at his interview with Francis the First, and in 1536 was named, with Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, and Sir Francis Bryan, to sit in judgment on the Lincolnshire insurgents. On his return from that employment he was appointed Comptroller of the Household, and, towards the end of the same year, was sworn of the Privy Council.

On the twenty-ninth of March, 1538, he was created Baron Russell, of Cheneys, in the county of Buckingham, an estate which he had acquired by his wife, and in 1540, on the dissolution of the greater monasteries, became enriched beyond all precedent, by grants from their spoil, particularly in Devonshire, where he obtained, together with the borough and town of Tavistock, the entire demesne of its very rich abbey, comprising nearly thirty manors, with many large estates in other parts of the county, as

JOHN RUSSELL,

well as in those of Bucks and Somerset. In 1541 he was constituted Lord Admiral of England and Ireland, and President of the Counties of Devon, Dorset, Cornwall, and Somerset, and, in the conclusion of that year, on some occasion of difference between his master and Francis the First, was sent with a military force into Picardy. On the third of December, 1543, the custody of the Privy Seal was committed to him, and in 1545, when Henry attacked Boulogne in person, he commanded the vanguard of the besieging army. The King, who died in the succeeding year, appointed him one of the sixteen executors to his will, who formed a Council of Regency for the administration of affairs during the minority of Edward the Sixth.

At the Coronation of that Prince he exercised the venerable and dignified office of Lord High Steward of England, and soon after received from the Crown a grant of the great estates of the dissolved monastery of Woburn, in Bedfordshire, which has since become the chief residence of his heirs. A formidable insurrection in the western counties, in 1549, against the measures of the reformation, which were then pursued with the utmost vigour, called him again into military service. In his character of Governor of those provinces he patiently endeavoured by every possible exertion of the civil authority to restore order, and, finding all such efforts ineffectual, placed himself at the head of the best armed force that he could muster, and attacked the insurgents with very inferior numbers. Of the straits to which he was frequently reduced, and the dangers to which he was exposed, in this unequal warfare, the judgment and bravery with which he extricated himself from them, and his final complete success, a very lengthened and particular account, still highly interesting to those who inhabit that part of the island, may be found in Hollinshed's Chronicle, and there only. It was an eminent public service, and he was rewarded accordingly, for on the nineteenth of January, 1549, O. S. he was created Earl of Bedford.

FIRST EARL OF BEDFORD

During his absence in the West commenced the attack on the Protector, Somerset, which, though for a while suspended, terminated two years after in the tragical death of that great person. A large body of the Peers, prevailed on through the artifices of Dudley, afterwards Duke of Northumberland, had combined against the Protector, and shewn themselves in open insurrection. He solicited the support of those whom he esteemed his friends, and of those who had remained neutral. A letter from the Protector, probably circular, to the Earl of Bedford, together with two from the Earl in answer, have been preserved also by Hollinshed.

“After our right hartie commendations,” says the Duke, “to your good Lordship, Here hath of late risen such a conspiracie against the King’s Majestie and us as never hath béene séene, the which they can not mainteine, with such vaine letters, and false tales surmised, as was never ment or intended on us. They pretend and saie that we have sold Bullonge to the French, and that we doo withhold wages from the soldiers, and other such tales and letters they doo spread abroad, (of the which if anie one thing were true we would not wish to live,) the matter now being brought to a marvellous extremitie, such as we would never have thought it could have come unto, especiallie of those men, towards the King’s Majestie and us, of whome we have deserved no such thing, but rather much favour and love. But the case being as it is, this is to require and praye you to hasten you hither to the defense of the King’s Majestie, in such force and power as you maie, to shew the part of a true gentleman, and of a verie friend, the which thing we trust God shall reward, and the King’s Majestie, in time to come, and we shall never be unmindfull of it too. We are sure you shall have other letters from them, but, as ye tender your dutie to the King’s Majestie, we require you to make no staie, but immediatlie repaire, with such force as ye have, to his Highnesse, in his castell of Windsor, and the

rest of such force as ye maie make to follow you And so we bid you right hartilie farewell. From Hampton Court, the sixt of October

Your Lordship's assured loving friend,

EDWARD SUMMERSET "

" To this letter," continues Hollinshed, " of the Lord Protector's, sent the sixt of October, the Lord Russell, returning answer againe vpon the eight of the said moneth, first lamented the heauie dissention fallen betweene the Nobilitie and him, which he tooke for such a plague, as a greater could not be sent of Almighty God vpon this realme, being the next waie, said he, to make us of conquerours slaves, and like to induce vpon the whole realme an universall thialdome and calamitie, vnless the mercifull goodnesse of the Lord doo helpe, and some wise order be taken, in staieng these great extiemities And, as touching the Duke's request in his letters, for as much as he had heard before of the broile of the Lords, and feared least some conspiracie had beene meant against the King's person, he hasted forward, with such companie as he could make, for the suertie of the King, as to him appertained Now, perceiving by the Lords' letters sent unto him the same sixt daie of October, these tumults to rise vpon privat causes betweene him and them, he therefore thought it expedient that convenient power should be levied, to be in a readinesse to withstand the worst, what perils soever might insue, for the preservation both of the King and State of the realme from invasion of forien enemies, and also for the staieng of bloudshed, if anie such thing should be intended betwixt the parties in the heat of this faction And this he thinking best for the discharge of his allegiance, humble besought his Grace to have the same also in speciall regard and consideration, first, that the King's Maiestie be put in no feare, and that if there be anie such thing wherein he hath given iust cause to them thus to proceed, he would so conforme himselfe as no such privat quarrels

FIRST EARL OF BEDFORD.

doo redound to the publike disturbance of the realme ; certifieng moreover the Duke that, if it were true, which he understood by the letters of the Lords, that he should send about proclamations and letters for raising up of the commons, he liked not the same ; notwithstanding he trusted well that his wisdome would take such a waie as no effusion of bloud should follow."

" And, thus much being contained in his former letters the eight of October, in his next letters againe, written the eleventh of October, the said Lord Russell, rejoising to heare of the most reasonable offers of the Lord Protector made to the Lords, wrote vnto him, and promised to doo what in the uttermost power of him (and likewise of Sir William Herbert, joined together with him) did lie, to worke some honorable reconciliation betweene him and them , so as, his said offers being accepted and satisfied, some good conclusion might insue, according to their good hope and expectation , signifieng, moreover, that, as touching the levieng of men, they had resolved to have the same in readinesse for the benefit of the realme, to occure all inconveniences whatsoever, that either by forren invasion or otherwise might happen : and so, having then power at hand to draw neere, whereby they might have the better opportunitie to be sollicitous and meanes for this reformation on both parts, &c. And thus much for the answer of the Lord Russell to the Lord Protector's letter."

These answers savour more of the caution of a politician than of the cordiality of a friend, or even the complaisance of a courtier. They were written, however, in a moment of great doubt and difficulty. The Earl seems, for no other intelligence remains of his conduct amidst that terrible contention, to have steered, probably with equal honesty and wisdom, an even course between the two parties. Certain it is that the downfall of Somerset neither increased nor diminished the favour in which he had been long held. During the greatest violence of the struggle it was his good fortune to be sent, with Lord Paget, Sir William Petre,

JOHN RUSSELL, FIRST EARL OF BEDFORD

and Sir John Mason, to treat of a peace with France, which was concluded at Guisnes, nearly at the same time when the flames of the faction at home were quenched by the blood of the Protector. He did not long survive the accession of Mary. His last public service was in an embassy of ceremony to Philip of Spain, whom he escorted in 1554 from Comina to London, and introduced to that Princess as a bridegroom. He died at his house in the Strand, London, on the fourteenth of March, in the following year, and was buried at Cheneys, leaving by his Countess, Anne, daughter and sole heir to Sir Gny Spocote, and widow of Sir Thomas Broughton, of Tudington, in Bedfordshire, an only child, Francis, his worthy and magnificent successor.

History affords us little on which to found a judgment of the first Earl of Bedford's character. His friends have neglected to transmit to posterity an account of those merits which could challenge so vast an extent of royal favour. His enemies too have been silent as to faults which their envy of that favour might naturally have led them to record. The detail of his services here given, is sufficient to assure us that he possessed no mean abilities, and if the conduct of such a man has escaped detraction, it justly demands our good opinion. The mighty Edmund Burke, it is true, with that magical eloquence which could almost immortalize or annihilate the characters of those whom he favoured or disliked, but with the doubtful justice which always attends effusions of anger, levelled a general censure at the memory of this Nobleman, to avenge an offence offered by his heir nearly three centuries after his death. If history could have furnished a single accusation against him, that memorable Philippic would certainly have recorded it; but it charges him only with having received great rewards, and barely insinuates that he might not have deserved them.



Engraved by J. C. Brown.

NICHOLAS RIDLEY, BISHOP OF LONDON

OB 1555

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLECTION OF

HIS EXCELLENCY THE LORD BISHOP OF DORSET

NICHOLAS RIDLEY,

BISHOP OF LONDON.

THIS exemplary Divine was no otherwise distinguished from his fellow labourers in the reformation than by a piety perhaps more humble and sincere, and a zeal more fervid. He seemed to have been born, as well as educated, for the ecclesiastical profession, and possessed every qualification to adorn, if the expression may be allowed, as well as to serve a Church. He had however the misfortune to live at a period when the clergy of his country had no alternative but to abjure the faith in which they had been bred, or to retire into obscurity and poverty, and he hesitated not to adopt the former course. Certainly the history of those frightful times cannot furnish an example of a purer or more consistent proselyte, yet it is difficult to imagine views merely spiritual in the conversion of the catholic chaplain of a protestant Primate to the religious profession of his Lord.

Little is known of Ridley's parentage. A collateral kinsman, of his surname, who several years since took great pains to collect all that had been related of him, could only inform us that his father was a third son of an ancient family, seated at Willimondswike, in Northumberland, and descended from a long series of Knights, and it is well known that the name still flourishes in great respectability in that province. We learn however, from the same authority, that he had two uncles, Laneelot, an elder, and Robert, a younger, brother of his father, both clergymen of some distinction, and that the latter took on himself to provide for the education of the young Nicholas. This engagement was strictly performed, for, after having been well grounded at the always respectable school of Newcastle on Tyne, he was removed

to Pembroke Hall, in Cambridge, and went a few years after to compleat his studies at the Sorbonne, and afterwards at the celebrated university of Louvain.

He had however in the mean time taken his degrees, in 1522 of Bachelor, and in 1524 of Master, of Arts, and had already established at Cambridge a considerable reputation for a critical skill in the learned languages, particularly the Greek, and was not less esteemed as a deeply read theologian, and an acute disputant. He returned from Louvain to his college in 1529, having added to those qualifications during his absence what was then esteemed the perfection of pulpit argument and eloquence. He became the favourite preacher, was chosen in 1533 senior proctor, and, in the following year, University orator and chaplain. It was at this time that Henry required the two Universities to examine the Scriptures on the grand question of the Pope's supremacy. Their report to the King is well known. Ridley not only went with the stream, but argued against the Papal claim with equal warmth and ingenuity, and it is probable that he then betrayed a leaning towards the new doctrines in spiritual matters, for he was soon after invited by Cranmer to reside in his house, as one of his domestic chaplains, and in the spring of 1538 the Archbishop gave him the vicarage of Heene, in Kent. In the succeeding year, on the passing of the act of the Six Articles, he had the boldness to preach publicly against that tremendous statute, to the most remarkable provision of which, the prohibition of marriage to the clergy, his patron was known to have rendered himself obnoxious. His gradual abandonment of the Church of Rome it must be confessed now attended the steps of Cranmer's defection with a singular regularity, and his preferment advanced in the same measure. In 1540 he was appointed a chaplain to the King; in the next year a prebendary of Canterbury, and in 1545 obtained a stall in the Church of Westminster.

In the mean time those of the old Church, justly alarmed by

his popularity as a preacher, made various efforts to silence him. In 1541 his brother prebendaries of Canterbury exhibited a complaint against him at the Archbishop's visitation, for having impugned the law of the Six Articles, and afterwards accused him at the Quarter Sessions for Kent, of directing that the *Te Deum* should be sung in English in his church of Herne, and of preaching against auricular confession. These charges were at length brought, probably on the suggestion of Cranmer, before the Privy Council, when the King referred them to the decision of that Prelate, by whom they were presently quashed. It was not however till shortly before the death of Henry that Ridley completely embraced the protestant faith. He had not yet rejected transubstantiation; and it is remarkable that in this last article of his conversion he once more accompanied Cranmer. We are told indeed by Fox, and others, that he employed nearly the whole of the year 1545 in reading and reflecting on this celebrated tenet, in utter retirement at his Vicarage, and Cranmer, in the preface to his treatise on the Sacrament, ascribes his own renunciation to the effect of his chaplain's arguments. At all events, this change in their profession may be said to have been simultaneous.

The doubts and fears of the reformers having been removed by the death of the capricious tyrant, Ridley gave the reins to his zeal and his eloquence. He presently gained the esteem of the young Edward, already a judge and a patron of merit. The fellows of Pembroke Hall, of which he had now been for some time master, having given him a living in the diocese of Norwich, the presentation to which was claimed by the Bishop, he was admitted to it by the express command of the King, and on the fourth of September, 1547, was promoted to the see of Rochester. In the succeeding year he was one of the divines to whom was intrusted the great task of composing the common prayer, and was soon after joined in commission with Cranmer and others for the correction of the schism of the Anabaptists, and the removal

NICHOLAS RIDLEY,

of other exerceences which had already deformed the new system of faith. In the execution of this latter office he unhappily made himself a party in some horrible acts of persecution, the most remarkable of which were the proceedings against Joan Bocher, or Joan of Kent, and a Dutelman, named Paris, who were burned alive, the one for denying the humanity, the other the divinity, of Christ. In the same year, 1539, he presided in a public disputation at Cambridge on the subject of the Sacrament of the Lord's supper, and the result was a decision against transubstantiation, for the purpose of obtaining which the conference had in fact been held.

Towards the close of the same year Bonner, Bishop of London, was deprived, and Ridley, who had been one of the commissioners by whose sentence he was ejected, was appointed to succeed him, and here a most amiable light is thrown on Ridley's character by the accidental preservation of some of those minute circumstances which make us better acquainted with men's characters than whole volumes of the most honest biography.

"He took care," says my authority, "to preserve from injury the goods, &c. belonging to Bonner, allowing him full liberty to remove them when he pleased. Such materials as Bonner had purchased for the repair of his house and church the new Bishop employed to the uses for which they were designed, but he repaid him the money which he had advanced for them. He took upon himself the discharge of the sums which were due to Bonner's servants for liveries and wages, and that the mother and sister of that Prelate, who lived near the palace at Fulham, might not be losers in consequence of his own promotion, he always sent for them to dinner and supper, constantly placing Mrs. Bonner at the head of the table, even when persons of high rank were his guests; often saying, 'by your Lordship's favour, this place, of right and custom, is for my mother Bonner;' as if he had succeeded to the relation, as well as office of her son." These small notices are the more valuable because very little has been

BISHOP OF LONDON.

transmitted to us as to his private character. I have met with scarcely any thing of that sort on which we may safely rely, except in a letter from William Turner (physician to the Protector Somerset, and who had been Ridley's fellow collegian) to Fox, who seems to have applied to him for personal matter of of Ridley to insert in his Martyrology. Turner, after extolling him as a disputant, and a scholar, enlarges, in the strongest terms, on his charitable disposition, the sweetness of his temper and manners, and the warmth of his attachments, and instances his friendship for Edmund Grindal, afterwards Primate, whom Turner calls his "Fidus Achates"

The first steps indeed of Grindal's progress to supreme dignity in the English Church were made under his guidance and patronage. This in some measure, proved by an original letter from Ridley to Sir John Cheke, which remains in the library of Emanuel College, and which it will not be impertinent to insert here, as a specimen of Ridley's energetic style

" Master Cheke,

I wish you grace and peace. Sir, in God's cause, for God's sake, and in his name, I beseech you of your pain and furtherance towards men of God's word. I did talk with you of late what ease I was in concerning my chaplains. I have gotten the good will and grant to be with me of three preachers, men of good learning, and, as I am persuaded, of excellent virtue, which are all able, both with life and learning, to set forth God's word in London, and in the whole diocese of the same, where is most need, of all parts of England, for thence goeth example, as you know, into all the rest of the King's Majesty's whole realm. The men's names be these: Master Grindal, whom you know to be a man of virtue and learning. Master Bradford, a man by whom I am assuredly informed God hath and doth work wonders in setting forth of his word. The third is a preacher the which, for detecting and confuting the Anabaptists and Papists in Essex,

NICHOLAS RIDLEY,

both by his preaching and writing, is now enforced to bear Christ's cross. The two first be scholars in the University: the third as poor as either of the other twain. Now there is fallen a Prebend in Paul's, called Cantrell's, by the death of one Leyton. This Prebend is an honest man's living of xxxiv. pounds, and better, in the King's books. I would give it with all my heart to Mr. Grindall, and so I should have him continually with me. The Council hath written to me to stop the collation, and say the King's Majesty hath determined it unto the furniture of his stable. Alas, Sir, this is an heavy hearing. Is this the fruit of the gospel? Speak, Mr. Cheke, speak, for God's sake, for God's cause, unto whomsoever you may do any good withall, and, if you will not speak, then I beseech you let this my letter speak.

From Fulham, this present, the xxiiiith. day of July, 1561.

Your's in Christ,

NIC. LONDON.

Ridley's promotion to the See of London seemed to reinvigorate the activity of his zeal. He presently made a diocesan visitation, in which he caused the altars in all the churches to be demolished, and replaced by the simple tables still in use. He was now appointed by the Privy Council, jointly with Cranmer, to compose a regular code of the Protestant faith, which having comprised in forty-two articles, it was sanctioned by the King in Council, and published under the royal authority. Having perhaps imbibed some portion of vanity from the praise which he had been so long used to receive for the acuteness and eloquence of his argumentation, he determined about this time to apply them towards the conversion of the Princess Mary, and with that view waited on her, at her residence at Hunsdon House. The narration of what passed in that visit, at least as creditable to the Princess as to the Bishop, is too curious to be here omitted, and I give it nearly in the very words of Fox.

“ Her Highness received him in the presence chamber, thanked

BISHOP OF LONDON.

him for his civility, and entertained him with very pleasant discourse for a quarter of an hour, said she remembered him at Court, when chaplain to her father, and mentioned particularly a sermon of his before her father, at the marriage of Lady Clinton, that now is, to Sir Anthony Browne; and then, leaving the presence chamber, she dismissed him to dine with her servants. After dinner she sent for him again, when the Bishop in conversation told her that he did not only come to pay his duty to her Grace by waiting on her, but, further, to offer his service to preach before her the next Sunday, if she would be pleased to admit him. Her countenance changed at this, and she continued for some time silent. At last she said, "I pray you, my Lord, make the answer to this yourself." The Bishop proceeding to tell her that his office and duty obliged him to make this offer, she again desired him to make the answer to it himself, for that he could not but know what it would be; yet, if the answer must come from her, she told him that the doors of the parish church should be open for him if he came, and that he might preach if he pleased, but that neither would she hear him, nor allow any of her servants to do it.

" 'Madam,' said the Bishop, 'I trust you will not refuse God's word.' 'I cannot tell,' said she, 'what you call God's word. that is not God's word now that was God's word in my father's days' The Bishop observed that God's word was all one at all times, but had been better understood and practised in some ages than others: upon which she could contain no longer. but told him -- 'You durst not for your ears have preached that in my father's days that now you do;' and then, to shew how able she was in this controversy, she added 'as for your new books, I thank God I never read any of them: I never did, and never will.' She then broke out into many bitter expressions against the form of religion at present established, and against the government of the realm, and the laws made in her brother's minority, which she said she was not bound to obey till the King came of perfect

age, and when he was so, she would obey them, and then asked the Bishop if he was one of the Council, and, on his answering no, 'you might well enough,' said she, 'as the Council goes now-a-days,' and parted from him with these words, 'My Lord, for your civility in coming to see me I thank you, but for your offer to preach before me I thank you not a whit' After this, the Bishop was conducted to the room where he had dined, where Sir Thomas Wharton gave him a glass of wine, which when he had drank he seemed confounded, and said 'surely I have done amiss,' and being asked how? he reproached himself for having drank in that place where God's word had been refused; 'whereas,' said he, 'if I had remembered my duty. I ought to have departed immediately, and to have shaken the dust from my feet, as a testimony against this house'" Even if Mary had attempted to convert him, he could scarcely have used a more furious speech.

A sad reverse of fortune awaited this poor Prelate, and even now closely impended over him. An incurable pulmonary malady soon after seized on the incomparable Edward, and with the decline of his health faded the views of the reformers. Not long before his death, Ridley having delivered before him, with great fervour of eloquence, a discourse on the duties of charity and beneficence, the King sent for him in the evening, to confer with him more at large on the subjects of his sermon, and it is the tradition that Christ's hospital, and those of St. Bartholomew, St. Thomas, and Bridewell, owe their foundation, or rather their endowments, to the effect produced on the King's mind by his communication with Ridley on that day. Edward survived but for a few weeks, and Jane Grey became the forlorn hope of the Protestants. Ridley exerted his utmost powers of persuasion in the public support and justification of her title to the Throne, and, on the utter failure of the enterprize at the head of which she had been cruelly placed, tendered his homage to Mary, and besought her mercy. He had however now added the crime of

BISHOP OF LONDON.

rebellion to what she deemed obstinate heresy, and could scarcely have hoped for forgiveness, even from the most clement Prince under her circumstances.

He was presently committed to the Tower of London, where he remained for eight months, in a less rigorous confinement than Cranmer, and others, who were imprisoned there for the same causes. It has been thought that Mary was inclined to spare him; an inference drawn from the fact that more strenuous endeavours were used with him to persuade him to recant than towards any of his fellow prisoners. The firmness however of his resistance does honour to his memory. He was removed, together with Cranmer and Latimer, to Oxford, and compelled to waste what may be called his dying breath in new disputations on the real presence, and other dogmas of the ancient Church. At length he was brought to trial, and, on the first of October, 1555, condemned to die for heresy. The fifteenth of the same month was appointed for the execution of the sentence, and neither ancient nor modern history can produce a finer example of an heroism, at once splendid and modest, than was displayed in the demeanour with which he met his frightful fate. He perished at the stake, in company with his ancient friend Latimer, and with unnecessary suffering, caused by the mismanagement of those to whom the preparations for the tragedy had been entrusted.

Bishop Ridley was author of a number of devout and controversial pieces, which have been printed, and long since forgotten. 1, "Injunctions of Nicholas Ridley, Bishop of London, to his diocese" 2, "a Treatise concerning images not to be set up nor worshipped in churches" 3, "a brief Declaration of the Lord's Supper" 4, "The way of peace among all Protestants," in a Letter to Bishop Hooper 5, "A Letter of reconciliation to Bishop Hooper" 6, "a piteous Lamentation of the miserable State of the Church of England in the time of the late revolt from the Gospel" 7, "a Comparison between the comfortable

age, and when he was so, she would obey them, and then asked the Bishop if he was one of the Council, and, on his answering no, 'you might well enough,' said she, 'as the Council goes now-a-days,' and parted from him with these words; 'My Lord, for your civility in coming to see me I thank you, but for your offer to preach before me I thank you not a whit.' After this, the Bishop was conducted to the room where he had dined, where Sir Thomas Wharton gave him a glass of wine, which when he had drank he seemed confounded, and said 'surely I have done amiss,' and being asked how? he reproached himself for having drank in that place where God's word had been refused; 'whereas,' said he, 'if I had remembered my duty, I ought to have departed immediately, and to have shaken the dust from my feet, as a testimony against this house'" Even if Mary had attempted to convert him, he could scarcely have used a more furious speech.

A sad reverse of fortune awaited this poor Prelate, and even now closely impended over him. An incurable pulmonary malady soon after seized on the incomparable Edward, and with the decline of his health faded the views of the reformers. Not long before his death, Ridley having delivered before him, with great fervour of eloquence, a discourse on the duties of charity and beneficence, the King sent for him in the evening, to confer with him more at large on the subjects of his sermon, and it is the tradition that Christ's hospital, and those of St. Bartholomew, St. Thomas, and Bridewell, owe their foundation, or rather their endowments, to the effect produced on the King's mind by his communication with Ridley on that day. Edward survived but for a few weeks, and Jane Grey became the forlorn hope of the Protestants. Ridley exerted his utmost powers of persuasion in the public support and justification of her title to the Throne, and, on the utter failure of the enterprise at the head of which she had been cruelly placed, tendered his homage to Mary, and besought her mercy. He had however now added the crime of

BISHOP OF LONDON.

rebellion to what she deemed obstinate heresy, and could scarcely have hoped for forgiveness, even from the most clement Prince under her circumstances.

He was presently committed to the Tower of London, where he remained for eight months, in a less rigorous confinement than Cranmer, and others, who were imprisoned there for the same causes. It has been thought that Mary was inclined to spare him ; an inference drawn from the fact that more strenuous endeavours were used with him to persuade him to recant than towards any of his fellow prisoners. The firmness however of his resistance does honour to his memory. He was removed, together with Cranmer and Latimer, to Oxford, and compelled to waste what may be called his dying breath in new disputations on the real presence, and other dogmas of the ancient Church. At length he was brought to trial, and, on the first of October, 1555, condemned to die for heresy. The fifteenth of the same month was appointed for the execution of the sentence, and neither ancient nor modern history can produce a finer example of an heroism, at once splendid and modest, than was displayed in the demeanour with which he met his frightful fate. He perished at the stake, in company with his ancient friend Latimer, and with unnecessary suffering, caused by the mismanagement of those to whom the preparations for the tragedy had been entrusted.

Bishop Ridley was author of a number of devout and controversial pieces, which have been printed, and long since forgotten. 1, "Injunctions of Nicholas Ridley, Bishop of London, to his diocese" 2, "a Treatise concerning images not to be set up nor worshipped in churches" 3, "a brief Declaration of the Lord's Supper" 4, "The way of peace among all Protestants," in a Letter to Bishop Hooper 5, "A Letter of reconciliation to Bishop Hooper" 6, "a piteous Lamentation of the miserable State of the Church of England in the time of the late revolt from the Gospel" 7, "a Comparison between the comfortable



THOMAS CRANMER ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY

Oil on wood

Acquired by the British Museum in 1858

THE BRITISH MUSEUM

THOMAS CRANMER,

ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.

CRANMER, unlike the generality of the clergy of his time, was of very respectable birth. His family was originally seated at Sotherton, in Suffolk, from whence his grandfather removed to Aslacton, in Nottinghamshire, on his marriage with the heiress of a most ancient house which bore the name of that parish, and whose estates he acquired by the match. The Archbishop was the second son of Thomas Cranmer, of Aslacton, by Agnes, daughter of Laurence Hatfield, of Willoughby, in the same county; and was born at the former place on the second of July, 1489. Stype informs us that the education of his childhood was entrusted to "a rude and severe parish clerk" (meaning, I suppose, the minister of his father's parish) "of whom he learned little, and endured much," and that at the age of fourteen he became a student of Jesus College, in Cambridge, and in due time was elected a fellow of that house, and took his degree of Master of Arts. His academical career was for a while arrested by an unbecoming match, into which he was probably led by that kind and easy nature which has been always ascribed to him. We are told particularly of his wife, that she was a relation to the hostess of the Dolphin Inn, opposite to Jesus Lane, in Cambridge, and resided there, doubtless in the character of a servant. The marriage of course deprived him of his fellowship, and this good man, destined to become the second person in the State, retired meekly to live with his wife at the inn, perhaps enjoying there, such is the delusion and uncertainty of human prospects, that peace, and tranquil security, which was ever denied

ARCHBISHOP CRANMER.

to his future grandeur. Within a year, however, she died in childbirth. Cranmer, such was the affection of his college towards him, was immediately restored to his fellowship; and in 1523 was admitted Doctor in Divinity, and appointed Reader of the Theological Lecture in his own college, and an examiner of candidates for divinity degrees.

He remained, thus employed, in the University till 1529, when an accident made him known to the King. The plague then raged in Cambridge, and Cranmer had taken refuge in the house of a Mr. Cressy, to whose wife he was related, at Waltham Abbey, in Essex, and had carried thither with him the sons of that gentleman, who were his college pupils. It happened during his short residence there that Edward Fox, at that time Almoner to the King, and afterwards Bishop of Hereford, and the celebrated Stephen Gardiner, came to visit his host and the legality of Henry's proposed divorce from Catharine of Arragon, for which he was then suing at Rome, becoming the topic of conversation, those eminent persons, to whom Cranmer's reputation at Cambridge was not entirely unknown, engaged him in the discussion. He ventured to say that he thought the King's reference to the Holy See was totally unnecessary; would produce tedious delay, and in the end prove ineffectual that the question whether a man might lawfully marry his brother's widow appeared to him to have been already clearly decided by the authority of the Scriptures, but that the safest method for the King to pursue would be to lay that question before the most learned divines of his two Universities, and to abide by their decision. Fox and Gardiner, who were good courtiers, as well as good catholics, conscious that the King would highly relish the proposal, hastened to inform him of it, and, honestly, or unwarily, mentioned the name of the author, on which Henry is said to have exclaimed, "this man hath gotten the sow by the right ear." He commanded Cranmer to wait on him without delay, formed presently a high opinion of his talents and his

learning, and directed him to digest in the form of a general treatise all his arguments on the subject of the divorce; and, in order to his undisturbed application to that task, placed him in the house of Thomas Earl of Wiltshire, where he became the friend and favourite of that nobleman's daughter, the beautiful and ill-fated Anne Boleyn, whom Henry already meditated to take to his second wife. These matters are said to have occurred in August, 1529.

When he had completed his book, the King sent him to Cambridge, to dispute for the positions which he had advanced in it, and the decision soon after publicly declared by that University against the legality of the marriage with Catharine has been ascribed by historians chiefly to the ingenuity of his reasoning, a compliment the justice of which, whatever we might be inclined to place to the score of Henry's fearful influence, or of the undoubted dictates of religion and morality, it would be impertinent in this place to controvert. Be that however as it might, certain it is that he had already acquired so great a degree of credit with his master that he placed him at the head of those divines and civilians who were attached to the Earl of Wiltshire's embassy in the following year to the courts of Rome, Paris, and Brussels, and instructed to argue there for the divorce. He had the boldness to present his book to the Pope, and to propose a public disputation on the question, which was civilly declined, but he pressed so closely for some sort of decision, that the Conclave was at length forced into the impious absurdity of uttering a judicial declaration that the marriage was against the law of God, but that yet the Pope had the power of dispensing with it. Leaving Rome, he travelled with the ambassador through Germany, and at Nuremberg became acquainted with Osiander, a celebrated Protestant divine of that city, with whom he sojourned for a considerable time, and prevailed on him to write a treatise on incestuous marriages, in reference to the King's case. But he had a stronger motive for prolonging his stay at

Nuremberg. He had again fallen, in the midst of his grave occupations, into the snare of Love and before he left that city was privately married to the niece of Osiander. This connection appears to have been attended but by little comfort, for, on his return, he left her in Germany, after a time, sent for her to England, and for five years together seemed to have no intercourse with her beyond an indifferent acquaintance; and even this he thought it prudent to relinquish, on the appearance in 1539 of the famous Six Articles, two of which forbade the marriage of priests, under pain of death, when he sent her again to her family. He had by this Lady (a fact which has escaped the notice of all who have written concerning him) a son, and a daughter. I find in the journals of Parliament that a bill passed the Commons on the ninth of March, 1562, for "the restoration in blood of Thomas and Margaret, children of the late Archbishop Cranmer."

To return to his public life. It should seem that the King had gradually imparted to Cranmer the whole of his confidence with regard to all his affairs in Germany, for we find him, singly, treating with the Emperor, the Elector of Saxony, and other Princes of the empire, on every matter of importance in which England was then concerned with them. He returned, however, in November, 1532, and was immediately named to succeed Warham, who had died in the preceding August, in the see of Canterbury; thus leaping at once from the Archdeaconry of Taunton, and a single benefice, so insignificant that the name of the parish has not been preserved, to the highest ecclesiastical dignity of his country. The truth is, that Henry had found in him a man of considerable talents, united to a candid and grateful mind: humble and pliant as to all temporal affairs, but stedfastly attached to the new faith, a sort of obstinacy at that moment most convenient to his master's purposes. Stype has recorded, not much to Cranmer's credit, a long detail of his coquetry with the King as to his acceptance of this mighty dignity, in which the simple

folly of *Nolo Episcopari* is absolutely burlesqued. He professed to decline it, not on the allegation, usual in such cases, of his own insufficiency, but because he could not endure the necessary appointment by the Pope, knowing his Majesty to be the supreme head of the Church. Henry, affecting to treat this as a new opinion, put him on the proof, and Cranmer quoted an host of texts. The King, good man, was staggered, and referred the question to some chosen civilians, who determined that Cranmer might, without offence to his conscience, accept the Archbishoprick at the hands of the Pope, and afterwards protest against his spiritual authority. He submitted, and was consecrated on the thirtieth of March 1543, when he took the usual oath of fidelity to the Pope, and at the same time recorded a long declaration, in which, unhappily, we find the following words. "*Non intendo per hujusmodi juramentum aut juramenta, quovis modo me obligare, quominus libere loqui, consulere, et consentire valeam, in omnibus et singulis reformationem religionis Christianæ, gubernationem Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ, aut prærogativum Coronæ ejusdem.*"

The first important public act of the new Primate was to pronounce the sentence of divorce between Henry and Catharine. the second, to marry that Prince to Anne Boleyn. Though his interest was strengthened by the elevation of that unfortunate Lady, it was not injured by her fall; and yet, much to the credit of his heart, he had ventured, on her commitment to the Tower, to intercede for her with her savage husband. Indeed his zeal and activity in the great work of the reformation had rendered him an instrument indispensably necessary to the King's designs. While Cromwell was busily demolishing the fabric of the ancient religion, Cranmer, with a gentler hand, raised the new one from its ruins; and, if the Church of England owes the strength and solidity of its structure to the power of Henry, the praise of its beautiful symmetry, and of the simple grandeur of all its parts, is due to the judgement, the mildness, and the patience, of the

ARCHBISHOP CRANMER

Archbishop The story of a man so employed affords but few personal circumstances, and a history of the reformation is in fact the public life of Cranmer. In the prosecution of his mighty task he encountered considerable obstacles, was frequently contradicted, and sometimes endangered. Few among his contemporary prelates were sincere reformers, though all had abjured the Papal authority. Among them, Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, not less distinguished by his sagacity than by his malignity, and the detestable Bonner, Bishop of London, were his bitterest enemies. At their secret instigation a long list of frivolous articles was preferred against him in 1543, by some clergy of his own diocese, for mal-administration, and irreligious practices, in his metropolitan church, and, that prosecution having justly ended in the utter shame and ruin of his accusers, he was charged in the House of Commons with heresy against the Sacrament of the Altar. This attack also failed, but in the following year a heavier blow was struck at him, for he was impeached to the King by a party, doubtless a majority, in the Privy Council, of endangering the safety of his Majesty, and of the realm, by dividing the people into a variety of heretical sects, on which it was demanded that he might forthwith be committed to the Tower, in order to his judicial examination. He was now saved by the special interposition of the King's absolute authority. Henry, having affected to consent to his imprisonment, sent privately for him in the night, and apprised him of his critical situation. Cranmer, stout in the defence of his doctrine and his practice, replied that he was well content to be committed, so that he might be afterwards indifferently heard. "O Lord," rejoined the King, (to use the words given to him by Fox) "what fond simplicity! so to permit yourself to be imprisoned, that every enemy of yours may take advantage against you. Do not you know that when they have you once in prison, three or four false knaves will soon be procured to witness against you, and condemn you, which, else, being now at liberty, dare not once open their

ARCHBISHOP CRANMER.

lips, or appear before your face ?” and hereupon gave him a ring, which was his usual token to the Council when he had determined to take the consideration of any matter from them to himself. They summoned the Archbishop to appear before them the next morning, and, after having subjected him to the indignity of waiting for an hour among servants in their anti-chamber, called him in ; recited their charges against him at great length ; and concluded by informing him of their resolution to make him prisoner , when he produced the ring, and the assembly, breaking up in confusion, waited on the King, who reproached them of falsely accusing his faithful servant, and terrified them into a shew of reconciliation with him. Shakespeare has detailed the circumstances of this incident in his play of Henry the Eighth with much historical fidelity

Henry at his death bestowed no peculiar mark of favour on Cranmer. He was named, it is true, in the King’s will as one of the sixteen executors, and guardians to the youthful successor, a distinction which could scarcely have been withheld from any one in his high office. Edward’s minority, however, and the affection of the Protector Somerset to the Protestant cause, left his inclination and his power to proceed in the reformation wholly uncontrouled. Gardiner and Bonner were committed to prison, and deprived ; as were Heath, Bishop of Worcester , Day of Chichester ; and Tunstal, of Durham ; but Cranmer’s triumph over them was marked by mildness and humanity. The death of Somerset, and the accession of Dudley to vice-legal power, mighty as the opposition had been of those two great men, impaired neither his power nor his credit, for Dudley was, or affected to be, a zealous Protestant, and Cranmer meddled little in temporal affairs, unless they were importantly connected with those of the church, and therefore had few political enemies. Unhappily, his exalted situation necessarily forced him to take a decided part on the great state question of the succession, which distinguished the close of this reign. After having argued with

equal boldness and acuteness in the Council, and with the King himself, in support of Mary's title to inherit the Crown, he was at last prevailed on by Edward himself, as it is said, in a personal conference, to subscribe to the Will by which that Prince had, on his death bed, bequeathed it to Jane Grey, and thus inexcusable vacillation sealed the ruin which before seemed ready to overwhelm him.

On the accession of Mary, the whole weight of her vengeance, and that of her hierarchy, burst upon him with irresistible fury. He was included in the act of attainder of the adherents of Jane, and in November, 1553, adjudged guilty of high treason for the part he had taken in her cause. He sued for mercy with the most submissive humility, and was tantalized with a pardon for that offence, which was granted merely to aggravate, as it should seem, the bitter chastisement which awaited him. Apparently in the same spirit, he was sent, in custody, from the Tower, together with Ridley and Latimer, to Oxford, to hold a public disputation on matters of Faith, with a select number of Romanists from the two Universities and the Convocation, deputed by the whole body of Mary's Bishops, not only for that purpose, but to deal judicially with the venerable prisoners. Here Cranmer adhered to his principles with a noble constancy, and on the twentieth of April, 1554, two days after the disputation, was again brought before this singular court; required to recant; and, on his refusal, condemned as a heretic. He was now remanded to his prison, till a confirmation of his sentence should be obtained from Rome, instead of which the Pope ordered a new trial, under his own authority, and directed Cardinal Pole, his Legate, to issue a commission for that purpose. On the twelfth of September, in the following year, Cranmer appeared before the commissioners, at the head of whom was Brooks, Bishop of Gloucester, in St. Mary's church in Oxford, and, after some slight form of trial, was again vehemently exhorted to renounce his errors, and again firmly refused: whereupon he was declared contumacious, and cited to

appear personally at Rome within eighty days, to which he agreed. In the mean time letters arrived from the Pope to the King and Queen, demanding that he should receive immediate condemnation, and be delivered over to the secular arm. This mandate was accompanied by an order to Bonner, and Thirleby, Bishop of Ely, to degrade him publicly, which ceremony was performed in the most mortifying and humiliating manner that vulgar malice could contrive.

All however was not yet lost. Cranmer with the crown of martyrdom suspended but by a hair over his head, was still a formidable adversary. His courageous maintenance of that faith from either the letter or spirit of which he had never for an instant swerved, was a weapon which his enemies could not have wrested from him: but, alas! he let it fall from his hand, and the glory of the Saint was lost in the weakness of the man. Seduced, as Lord Herbert gives us room to suppose, by hopes treacherously held out to him, in an evil hour he signed a written recantation of all his doctrines. The rest is horrible to relate. Having thus sacrificed a splendid reputation in this world, and hazarded his salvation in the next, for the sake of a small remnant of mortal life, which he must have passed in disgrace and obscurity, an order was secretly issued for his execution. He was led to St. Mary's Church to hear a sermon, and placed opposite to the pulpit, which was mounted by a friar, who exhorted him to persist stedfastly in the faith which he had lately embraced, and that to death itself, "which," added the Friar, "it is the will of the magistrate to inflict on you this day!"

In this dreadful moment Cranmer sprang above himself, and nearly redeemed all that he had lost. "He rose from his seat," says Bishop Godwyn, "and, without the smallest discovery of fear, made an excellent speech to the people, in which having premised many things concerning reformation of life and morals, he repeated the principal heads of his doctrine, and briefly explained his faith, affirming that in the power of the Pope was

contained and established the Kingdom of Antichrist; and, finally, representing how heinously he had offended God by renouncing the truth, he declared therefore his resolution that his right-hand, which had so impiously sinned in subscribing the doctrines proposed by the enemies of truth, should be the first to suffer punishment." He was hurried directly from the church to the place of execution "There he stood," continues Godwyn, as translated by Bishop Kennet, in a strain of expression which could not be amended, "exposed, the most piercing spectacle in the world, sufficient, one would think, not only to extort compassion from his enemies, but to melt inanimate things into tears, the Primate of England, that lately flourished in the highest honour and authority with Princes, most venerable for his great sanctity of life, for his age, person, learning, gravity, and innumerable excellencies of mind, now by the malice of the Romanists, diest in a ridiculous old habit, baited with scurrility, and contemptuous revilings, and dragged to a most inhuman and tormenting death. When he was bound to the stake, as soon as the fire was kindled, he raised his left hand to Heaven, and, thrusting out the other, held it in the flames, not removing it, except once to stoak his beard, till it was quite consumed. At last, as the flame increased, lifting up his eyes, he cried out, Lord, receive my spirit! and, continuing as motionless as the stake to which he was tied, endured the violence of the torture till he expired."

Archbishop Cranmer was the author of a multiplicity of devotional and controversial works. We have of his writings in print, his treatise on the unlawfulness of Henry's first marriage, which has already been mentioned. Several Letters to that Prince and his ministers, and to some foreign divines. Three discourses on the Matter of the King's book, entitled "the Erudition of a Christian Man" a great part of what was called "the Bishop's Book" Queries in order to the correcting of several abuses in religion. Queries concerning reformation, with

ARCHBISHOP CRANMER.

answers A resolution of seventeen questions concerning the Sacraments A collection of passages out of the Canon Law, to shew the necessity of reforming it Answers to the fifteen articles of the Devonshire rebels in 1549 A Defence of the true and Catholic doctrine of the Sacrament of the body and blood of Christ, which having been attacked in an answer by Gardiner, Cranmer rejoined in a second tract on the same subject A Preface to the English translation of the Bible. A Catechism of Christian doctrine The first part of the Book of Homilies An answer to Dr. Richard Smith, who had written against his books on the Sacrament A Confutation of unwritten Verities Reasons which led him to oppose the Six Articles Answers to some Queries concerning Confirmation Considerations offered to King Edward the Sixth in favour of a further Reformation A Manifesto against the Mass and a Manual of pious Prayers. All, or nearly all, these Works may be found, either originally printed, or reprinted, in the collections of Fox, Burnet, and Strype.

His manuscript remains are perhaps equally voluminous, for several of his Tracts which are known to have existed are still undiscovered. Two very large volumes, written by his own hand, on all the great points at issue between the two Churches, are in the King's Collection in the British Museum, and there are, or were, six or seven more in the library at Hatfield. Burnet mentions two other volumes, which he examined; and many of his original letters are in the Cotton Library. Strype states that he left also a Declaration, in two books, against the Pope's Supremacy; a treatise, in two books, against the Pope's Purgatory; another, concerning justification, and an Argument against the sacrifice of the Mass, composed during his imprisonment; but does not inform us whether in manuscript, or printed.

The original from which the present engraving is taken is a singular curiosity, independently of its great intrinsic merit; for it is the only known specimen of an artist whose very name has

ARCHBISHOP CRANMER.

escaped the observation of Lord Orford, Pilkington, Bryan, and others who have favoured us with notices of pictorial biography

It is inscribed “*Gerbius Flicciis faciebat,*” and by a label which appears on another part of the picture we are informed that it was painted in the fifty-seventh year of the Archbishop’s life.



EDWARD COURTENAY EARL OF DEVONSHIRE

OBJ. C.

A. 10. 11. A. 10. 11.

HIS GRACE THE DUKE OF BEDFORD

EDWARD COURTENAY,

EARL OF DEVONSHIRE

WE view the circumstances of this Nobleman's short life through the mists of fear and prejudice. An unhappy fatality, as it might seem, had connected him, even from the hour of his birth, with the highest public considerations, in a time peculiarly marked by cruelty and suspicion. Many who knew the truth of his story, and might have been inclined to tell it with fidelity, shrank probably from so hazardous a disclosure, and remained nearly silent. Of those who have touched on it more at large, some seem to have been confined by party spirit, and others by an authority not unwelcome to their religious and political bigotry, to the relation of a few facts which tend rather to excite curiosity than to afford information. Even from them, however, we are enabled to infer with accuracy that he was accomplished, innocent, and miserable.

His misfortunes originated solely in his illustrious descent. His father, Henry Courtenay, tenth Earl of Devonshire of his family, whose mother was the Princess Catherine, daughter of King Edward the Fourth, had been one of the ephemeral favourites of Henry VIII. who, having advanced him to the title of Marquis of Exeter, caused him a few years after, to be accused of high treason, in having corresponded by letter with his banished kinsman, Cardinal Pole, convicted without proof, and beheaded. His mother, Gertrude, daughter of William Blount, Lord Montjoy, was in the following year, by a monstrous perversion of law, attainted without trial, but her life was spared. Edward, their only son, the subject of this Memoir, was born about the year 1526, and, immediately after the death of his father, though then

EDWARD COURTENAY,

only twelve years of age, was committed to the Tower, "lest he should raise commotions," says the author of the History of the Courtenay Family, "by revenging his father's quarrel." Thus dreadfully do injustice and fear ever attend and aggravate each other. He remained there, painful to relate, a close prisoner, for fifteen years. The clemency usually ascribed to the reign of Edward VI which indeed owes the reputation of mildness and justice merely to a comparison with the deeper horrors of that which preceded it, afforded him no relief. He was even one of the six persons who were specially excepted from the general pardon granted at Edward's coronation. Mary, however, immediately after her accession visited his prison, where this unfortunate young man, together with the Duke of Norfolk, Bishop Gardiner, and the Duchess of Somerset, presented themselves to her on their knees upon Tower Hill, when she kindly raised and kissed them, saying, "these be my prisoners," and on the third of September, 1558, exactly one month afterwards, restored to him the Earldom of Devonshire, by a new patent of creation, together with such of his father's great estates as had not yet been granted away by the Crown. Prince, in his "Worthies of Devon," and some others, add that the dignity of Marquis of Exeter was also at the same time revived in him, but this is an error.

Mary's benignity towards him has been so generally ascribed by historians to a personal affection that the fact can scarcely be doubted. Fuller, whose words I quote for the sake of conciseness, and who ought never to be quoted unless his account be supported, as it is in great measure in this instance, by the testimony of more cautious writers, tells us, in his "Holy State," that "this most noble young Earl was a person of lovely aspect, of a beautiful body, sweet nature, and royal descent all which concurring in him, the Queen cast an obliging countenance upon him, and, as it was generally conceived, intended him an husband for herself, of which report hath handed down to us this confirmation that when the said Earl petitioned the Queen for leave

to travel, she advised him rather to marry, ensuring him that no lady in the land, how high soever, would refuse him for an husband, and, urging him to make his choice where he pleased, she pointed herself out unto him as plainly as might consist with the modesty of a maiden, and the majesty of a Queen." Others, with much improbability, add that he was one of the persons recommended to her by her Privy Council among whom to choose a husband Bishop Godwyn, a historian of deserved credit, and who was then in existence, says, according to Kennett's translation, that "there were three at that time allotted by common fame for her choice: Philip, Prince of Spain, Cardinal Reginald Pole, and Courtenay, Marquis of Exeter," (for so the Bishop always styles him). "The two latter had their country, and the splendor of their ancestors, to recommend them, and there were hopes that under either of them the liberty and privileges of the kingdom would be preserved. Affinity of blood was respected in them all. Pole was much in the Queen's affection for his gravity and holy life, joined with the greatest courtesy and prudence, and Courtenay for his youth, good humour, and his courtly address, but some suspicions were raised against the latter as if he favoured the reformation"

The correctness of the report that he had made a tender impression on the heart of Mary is here rather favoured than opposed. Those who have delivered it down to us add, that he treated her advances with indifference, because he was warmly attached to her sister Elizabeth. Burnet seems to have believed the whole, for he says, in the History of the Reformation, "The new Earl of Devonshire was much in her favour, so that it was thought she had some inclinations to marry him, but he, either not presuming so high, or really having an aversion to her, and an inclination to her sister, who of that moderate share of beauty that was between them had much the better of her, and was nineteen years younger, made his addresses with more than ordinary concern to the Lady Elizabeth, and this did bring them

both into trouble” Sir Thomas Wyatt, on the contrary, when he was taken prisoner, accused the Earl of having engaged in his conspiracy, in resentment of the Queen’s having refused to take him for her husband, and of a consequent design to depose her, and obtain the throne by marrying Elizabeth, and upon this charge both the Princess and the Earl were committed to the same prison from which he had been only six months before released. Wyatt, however, when he was led to execution, confessed that he had invented it in the hope of saving his life, and intreated that he might be conducted to the apartment of the Earl of Devonshire, which being permitted, he besought the Earl, on his knees, to pardon the wicked slander which he had falsely uttered. Several respectable writers, following Fox, whose partiality is seldom considered with sufficient caution, say that Gardiner, in his malice to Elizabeth, contrived this interview, and then reported to the Council that Wyatt had solicited it for the purpose of exhorting the Earl to confess his guilt, and that of the Princess. But Wyatt, on the scaffold, (and here I will use not only Fox’s words, but his authority, for he durst not have stated falsely what had been so lately proclaimed in the hearing perhaps of thousands), told the people, “Whereas it is noised abroad that I should accuse the Lady Elizabeth, and the Lord Courtenay, it is not so, good people, for I will assure you that neither they, nor any other now yonder in hold, were privy to my rising before I began, as I have declared no less to the Queen and Council, and it is most true”

The Earl was detained in the Tower till the twenty-fifth of May, 1554, when he was removed in the night to Fotheringhay Castle, in Northamptonshire, and there still kept in close imprisonment till the spring of the following year; when Philip, to gain popularity among his new subjects, for the view which we have of his character allows no hope of a better motive, procured the enlargement of the Earl, as well as of the Princess, who was at that time confined in the royal house of Woodstock. The

miserable Courtenay, conscious that he should ever remain an object of suspicion, made the first use of that liberty which he had so little known to implore the Queen's permission to quit England. which having obtained, he travelled through France and Italy, and at length determined to sit down at Padua, in the fruitless hope of passing there in quiet the remainder of a life which had hitherto been distinguished by the most undeserved and unexampled persecution. Within a few weeks however after his arrival, he was seized by a distemper which, within fourteen days from its first appearance, carried him off, on the fourth of October, 1556, not without strong, and probably well-founded, suspicion of poison, administered at the instigation of emissaries from the land which had given him his ill-fated birth. He was buried in the Church of St. Anthony, in Padua, where a superb monument remains, or lately remained, to his memory, with the following uncouth inscription, which I insert because it affords, from a somewhat singular source, a corroboration of some of the most important circumstances of a story involved in much uncertainty, and frequently disfigured by wilful misrepresentation.

“ Anglia quem genuit, fueratque habitura patronum,
Corteneum celsa hæc continet arca Ducem
Credita causa necis Regni affectata cupido,
Reginæ optatum tunc quoque connubium
Cui regni proceres non consensere, Philippo
Reginam Regi jungere posse rati
Europam unde fuit juveni peragrarè necesse,
Ex quo mors misero contigit ante diem
Anglia si plorat defuncto principe tanto
Nil mirum, domino deficit illa pio
Sed jam Cortenius cælo, fruiturque beatis
Cum doleant Angli, cum sine fine gemant
Cortenei probitas igitur, præstantia, nomen,
Dum stabit hoc Templum vivida semper erunt
Anglia hinc etiam stabit, stabuntque Britanni,
Conjugii optati fama perennis erit
Improba naturæ leges libitina rescindens,
Ex æquo juvenes, præcipitatque senes ”

EDWARD COURTENAY, EARL OF DEVONSHIRE

The elder male line of the great House of Courtenay became extinct by the death of this young nobleman, and the remains, still considerable, of its vast estates fell by inheritance to the heirs of the four sisters of his great grandfather, who had married into the ancient western families of Trerheif, Arundel of Talverne, Mohun, and Trelawny



Page d't. m. l. p. m.

CARDINAL POITE

OB 1557

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF THIEN IN THE COLLECTION OF

THE RT HON^{BLE} LORD MUNDY OF WARDOUR

CARDINAL POLE.

REGINALD POLE, a noble example to the age in which he lived, stood almost alone, without acquiring the degree of distinction which he justly merited. The splendor of his birth forbade his mixing with a clergy generally sprung from the most ordinary ranks of the people, and the native candour and generosity of his heart restrained him from taking any share in those secret intrigues, those pious frauds, which were then the venial faults of the rulers of a falling church. He was in a great measure disqualified, not only by the sweetness of his temper, and the politeness of his breeding, but by the large scope of his mind, for controversies in which the most obscure and insignificant subtleties were always discussed with ill nature and ill manners. His aversion to persecution made him a silent and inactive member of those ecclesiastical commissions which in his own country derived credit from his name, and a sincere christian humility, joined to that dignified spirit which ruled his conduct in temporal affairs, detached him from the parties which agitated the Conclave, and besieged the Papal Throne. Thus in his own time more admired than understood, respected, but not imitated; and of habits too widely dissimilar from those of others of his own station to admit easily of comparison; it is rather his character than his history that has been transmitted to posterity. It is the common fate of good counsels that have been rejected, and of worthy examples that have been contemned, to pass in a great measure unrecorded.

The blood of the House of York flowed largely in his veins, and he was doubly related to royalty. He was the fourth and youngest son of Richard Pole, Lord Montague, cousin german to Henry

CARDINAL POLE.

the seventh, by Margaret, daughter of George, Duke of Clarence, brother to Edward the fourth. He is said to have been born in the month of March, 1500, at Stoveiton Castle, as Camden informs us, the seat of his father, in Staffordshire. Designated from his earliest infancy for the clerical profession, he was sent at the age of seven years to commence his education with the Carthusians of the monastery of Sheen, in Surrey, and afterwards to the Carmelites of the White Friars, in London, from whence, when about twelve years old, he removed to Oxford, and was entered a nobleman of Magdalen College, where he studied under those eminent scholars, Thomas Linacre, and William Latimer. It is perhaps unimportant to record those steps which may be considered as mere formalities of advancement in one whom power had predestined to fill the highest station in his profession, but we find that on the nineteenth of March, 1517, he was appointed Prebendary of Yoscomb, and on the tenth of April, 1519, of Yatminster Secunda, both in the church of Salisbury, and that he was, about the same time, Dean of Wimbourne Minster in Dorsetshire, and, shortly after, Dean of Exeter. Henry the eighth now sent him, with a large allowance, and a retinue becoming his rank, to Italy, and he settled at Padua, where he was presently surrounded by the ablest and more erudite of that country, and acquired in their society those final graces and refinements of education which even learning can never attain, but in the warmth and freedom of good conversation.

Having passed seven years at Padua, Venice, and Rome, he returned home, and, remaining in the court barely long enough to receive the homage which it was eager to pay to his talents and acquirements, modestly retired to a small house at Sheen, where for two years he prosecuted his studies and devotions with severity, and bestowed his hours of relaxation on such of his old Carthusian masters as still survived. He quitted this retreat upon the first rumours of Henry's inclination to dissolve his marriage with Catherine of Arragon, to which he was utterly

averse, and, in order to avoid the necessity of giving unwelcome advice to the King, by whom he was certain to be consulted on that difficult subject, went to Paris, under the pretence of completing his studies. He was soon however followed thither by the question which Henry, by Cranmer's advice, had determined to lay before all the learned of Europe "whether it were lawful for a man to marry the widow of a brother, to whom she had borne no issue," and he was commanded by the King to use his best endeavours to prevail on the French Universities, particularly that of Paris, to answer negatively. He contrived to excuse himself from this employment, and, for the time, to evade giving a direct opinion. The King became displeased, and Pole's family advised him to return to England, and to that simplicity of life which might prevent suspicion. He came accordingly, after a year's absence, and resumed his former habitation at Sheen, where he had scarcely seated himself when Henry, who had now determined to sound the inclinations of the most eminent for power or learning of his own subjects on the question of his divorce, besieged him with emissaries, who pressed him vainly for his concurrence. The See of Winchester, and afterwards that of York, were offered to him as the price of his concession, but he still declined to utter any judgment on the matter, and begged only to be left in peace. His brothers were at last induced to endeavour to move him by representations of the ruin to his family that would inevitably follow his refusal, and with which they had actually been threatened, and his kind nature now gave way. He consented to wait on the King, and to dissemble those scruples which he could not abandon. In his audience he long remained mute, but at length, nobly sacrificing passion to conscience, and safety to sincerity, burst into that flow of powerful argument in which he was so great a master, and finally exhorted the King to desist from his purpose. Henry during their discourse is said frequently to have laid his hand on his dagger. Pole however escaped with no further punishment at that time than

the loss of favour, and availed himself of this precarious interval of forbearance to solicit the King's permission once more to leave the country.

He now resided for a year at Avignon, and removed from thence to his favourite Padua, where he had not long been before a messenger arrived from Henry, not only again to urge his concurrence in the divorce, but in the greater matter of the King's assumption of the supremacy. As this Prince had already denounced the penalties of high treason against those of his subjects who might oppose that act, it is clear that his meaning was now to reduce Pole to implicit obedience, or virtually to sentence him to banishment. He sent also, under the pretence of argumentative persuasion, a book which had been published in England, by Richard Sampson, Bishop of Chichester, intituled "*Oratio hortatoria ad obedientiam Regis, contra Papam*" Pole, in answer, declared his total disapprobation both of the divorce, and the separation from the See of Rome, and soon after addressed to the King his large treatise, composed in four months, and subsequently published at Rome, "*Pro Unitate Ecclesiasticâ*," in which he not only answered the chief points of Sampson's oration, but openly exhorted Henry to return to his obedience to the Pope, and called on the Emperor Charles the fifth to resent the injury done to his aunt, the repudiated Queen. Henry, who, with all his faults, was seldom treacherous, now dissembled his anger, in the double hope of preventing the publication of this book, and of getting the person of the author into his power. He sent therefore, specially by post, a mild message, from which it might have been inferred even that his resolutions were somewhat shaken, requiring Pole to return to England, for the purpose of discussing more at large some particular passages in his treatise, which he answered by a direct refusal, and by a spirited reiteration of his former counsel. It was doubtless of that book, though Strype seems to think that it referred to some other, now unknown, that Cranmer, in a letter which may be found in the appendix to

CARDINAL POLE.

Strype's Life of that prelate, thus expressed himself to Thomas Boleyn, Earl of Wiltshire "As concerning the Kyng his cause," says Cranmer, " Mayster Raynold Poole hath wrytten a booke moche contrary to the Kynge hys purpose, wythe such wytte that it apperith that he myght be, for hys wysedome, of the Cownsell to the Kynge his Grace, and of such eloquence, that if it were set forthe, and knowne to the comen people, I suppose yt were not possible to persuade them to the contrary." Such was the testimony borne to the talents of this eminent person by his most determined adversary

The King now proceeded to deprive him of his ecclesiastical preferments, and of the large pension which even to this time he had received, and soon after caused him to be proclaimed a traitor, offering a reward to any who should kill him. The favour of the Court of Rome naturally kept pace with Henry's vengeance, and in January, 1536, Paul the third created him a Cardinal, and soon after appointed him Legate to the Court of France, and afterwards, at the desire, as it should seem, of the Emperior, to Flanders. He had not been long at Paris when he was secretly informed that Henry had written to the French King to deliver him up as a rebel subject, and fled therefore precipitately to Cambray, and from thence to Liege, nor was his mission to the Low Countries more successful, for the Queen Regent, intimidated by the threats of Henry, refused to receive him in his legantine character. He was therefore recalled by the Pope, and travelled through Germany to Rome, from whence he accompanied Paul to Nice, negotiated a peace between the Emperor and Francis the first, and soon after travelled, with all possible privacy, into Spain, and from thence to Paris, to engage those Princes, and others, to abandon their designs against the Turk, and to form a league for the restoration of the ancient faith, and of the papal authority, in England. While these matters were passing, in 1539, Henry, with a savage meanness, wreaked his vengeance on the Cardinal's family. His mother, and two of his three brothers, were brought

CARDINAL POLE

to trial, chiefly on the charge of having corresponded with him, and condemned to die. The younger, Sir Geoffery Pole, wrought on by his fears, was induced to accuse the rest of an incredible design to depose the King, and raise the Cardinal to the throne, and received therefore a pardon ; but the Lord Montague suffered death, and his venerable mother, heir of the great House of Plantagenet, after two year's imprisonment, was also brought, at the age of seventy, to the scaffold, where, says Lord Herbert, " being commanded to lay her head on the block, she refused, saying ' so should traitors do, but I am none,' neither did it serve that the executioner told her it was the fashion so, turning her grey head every way, she told him, if he would have her head, to get it as he could, so that he was constrained to fetch it off slovenly!"

Pole, overwhelmed probably by these domestic miseries, now passed some years nearly in inactivity, and the Pope, anxious to preserve him from Henry's fury, sent him to Viterbo, with the honorary character of Legate. He resided there till 1546, when on the meeting, in the beginning of January, of the Council of Trent, he was deputed thither, with two other Cardinals, to represent the Pontiff. He was obliged by ill health to leave the Council sitting, and to retire again for a time into privacy, and during that interval his great enemy, King Henry, was taken off by death. Paul the third dying in 1549, Pole was twice elected, if it may be so said, to the Popedom. He was opposed by the Cardinals in the French interest, and the first determination of the Conclave in his favour was made amidst tumult and party rage. He refused it therefore as irregular, and not sufficiently deliberate, whereupon his friends reluctantly proceeded to a new scrutiny, and the former election was confirmed, late in the evening of the same day, by a clear majority of voices. They repaired to his apartment to notify it, and to adore him, according to the custom, but he had retired to rest. " He received them with anger," says the translator of that passage in his life, written by his friend Ludovico Baccatelli, " telling them that he would not have a

thing which was to be feared, rather than desired, carried on tumultuously and rashly, but decently and orderly : That the night was not a proper time : God was a God of light, and not of darkness ; and therefore it ought to be deferred till day came." These answers were ill suited to the pride and the vivacity of Italians, and on a third scrutiny, the Cardinal del Monte was elected, and took the name of Julius the third From that Pontiff, who was Pole's particular friend, he obtained leave to retire from all public concerns at Rome, and seems at that time to have resolved to pass the remainder of his life in a devout seclusion. He fixed his abode at a monastery, in the territory of Verona, where he remained for nearly four years, when the unexpected death of Edward the sixth drew him suddenly from his retirement.

Of Mary's attachment to that form of christianity which Pole so sincerely professed it is unnecessary to speak , and he, above all men, possessed those talents which were best calculated to aid its restoration in England. The Pope therefore, soon after the Queen's accession, nominated him Legate to her Court, and he set out towards London in the end of October, 1554 A slight and ineffectual opposition to his appointment was offered by the Emperor. Some advances had been already made towards a treaty of marriage between his son, Philip of Spain, and the Queen, but it was rumoured that she had betrayed an inclination to bestow her hand on the Cardinal, and well known that a large party in England preferred him to the Spaniard. The marriage with Philip however was soon after celebrated, and Pole arrived in London just upon the meeting of Mary's second Parliament, on the eleventh of November. One of its first acts was to reverse his attainder , the King and Queen paid him the extraordinary compliment of going in person to assent to that single bill ; and the Cardinal took his seat among the Peers. In the long catalogue which history furnishes of the triumphs of worldly interests over principle and conscience perhaps no one can be found more remarkable than that which immediately followed,

and in a single hour suspended the effect of twenty-five years' labour. "A little after his coming," says the translator of Bishop Godwin's history of the reign of Mary, "both Houses being assembled, and the King and Queen being present, the Lord Chancellor having notified the Cardinal's grateful arrival, Pole himself, in his native tongue, made a long speech, full of extraordinary acknowledgements to their Majesties, to the Lords and Commons, by whose favour, his banishment and proscription being repealed, he was restored to the rights and privileges of his native country. 'And the best return,' he said, 'which in duty and gratitude he could make for so great an obligation was this that, since by the late schism they had become exiles from the unity of the Church, and the kingdom of heaven, he would, by authority from Christ's Vicar, bring them back to the fold, and so restore them to their heavenly inheritance. Therefore he exhorted them ingenuously to acknowledge and detest the errors of the late times, and with sincere alacrity of mind to accept and retain the benefit which God, by the Vicar's Legate, offered to them; for, since he was come with the keys, to open to them the church gates, nothing now remained than, that as they had opened a way for his return, by abrogating the laws which had made him an exile, so they should abrogate all those laws too which, being lately made against the Apostolical See, wholly separated them from the body of the church.'

"After he had made a long harangue," continues the Bishop, "to this effect, and ransacked antiquity to shew how religiously their forefathers were devoted to the See of Rome, the gravity of his countenance, his smooth language, and the elegant method of his discourse, so sensibly affected the devotees of Popery that they believed themselves just then regenerated to the hopes of salvation. yet there were some of the House of Commons who strenuously opposed the submitting again to the Roman yoke; but, in fine, by the pressing instances of the King and Queen, all things were concluded to the Cardinal's satisfaction, the Pope's

former authority in this realm was restored; and the title of Supreme Head of the Church abrogated from the Crown. A petition for absolving the clergy and laity from the crime of heresy was presented by the Bishop of Winchester, Lord Chancellor, to the Legate, who pronounced the absolution, in English, to all the Estates, kneeling. After this they went in procession to the Chapel Royal, singing *Te Deum*; and on the Sunday following the Bishop of Winchester in his sermon related the particulars of that day's proceeding."

The Cardinal's soon proved, however, a painful, and indeed but a nominal, preeminence. Mary, gloomy, morose and revengeful, and, as may be feared, in her very nature cruel, was easily led to reject the wise and temperate plans which he seems to have formed, and to set at nought those mild, as well as wise, counsels which would probably have perpetuated the Romish religion in England. Gardiner, barbarous as herself, and with powers of mind which, though of a different cast, were equal to those of Pole, obtained her ear, and laid the foundation of those measures which have rendered her name a blot on the page of history. He regarded Pole too with the jealousy of a rival, and thirsted for the Primacy, vacant by the deprivation of Cranmer, which Mary had designed for the Cardinal, and which he now held in sequestration. In the spirit of hatred which soon arose out of these causes Gardiner intrigued at Rome for the dignity of the Purple, and to induce the new Pope Paul the fourth, of the family of Caraffa, who had been always Pole's bitter enemy, to transfer the legantine character from that Prelate to himself. Gardiner however died while he was eagerly prosecuting these schemes, and three months after, on the fifteenth of February, 1556, the next day after Cranmer's execution, Pole was consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury. In the mean time the Pope proceeded to deprive him of the office of Legate, and invested another with that character, but Mary refused to admit him into her kingdom, and, after a sharp contest, which she maintained with a becoming

and laudable spirit, Pole was reinstated. But the hand of death then hovered unseen over the mistress and the servant. He was soon after attacked by a feverish complaint, in which he lingered for several weeks, while Mary also gradually sunk under an unknown malady. She died on the seventeenth of November, 1557, and the Cardinal, whose departure was probably accelerated by receiving the news, survived her exactly sixteen hours. He was buried with great state in the Cathedral of Canterbury, but with no other epitaph than this short inscription, "*Depositum Cardinalis Poli.*"

The productions of Pole's pen, as might be expected, were very numerous. In addition to his book *de Unitate*, which has been mentioned, he addressed to Henry the eighth a defence of that work, and another to Edward the sixth. His other printed writings are "*Reformatio Angliæ, ex decretis Reg. Poli*" "*De Concilio*" "*De Baptismo Constantini Imperatoris*" "*De Summè Pontificis officio et potestate*," and other tracts on that subject "*Oratio in Materia de Pace*" "*Oratio ad Imperatorem contra Evangelicos*" and "*A Treatise of Justification*," with which are printed translations of several small ancient works, chiefly on the same subject. He left also in manuscript, according to Anthony Wood "*Comment. in Esaiam*" "*Comment in Davidis Hymnos*" "*Catechismus*" "*Dialogus de Passione Christi*" "*De natali die Christi*" "*De modo concionandi*" A Discourse unfinished, addressed to Philip and Mary, of restoring the Goods to the Church—and three Homilies. He had likewise been for several years employed, as we learn from the same authority, in collecting with the greatest care the various readings and emendations of the text of Cicero's works, together with the critical observations of all his learned friends on that author, with the intention of publishing a complete edition. This classical curiosity is it seems totally lost, as are probably most of the rest of his unpublished works.



151112

QUEEN MARY

151112

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF BODLEY IN THE COLLECTION OF
THE MOST NOBLE THE MARQUESS OF EXETER

QUEEN MARY.

THE history of this Princess, who it is scarcely necessary to say was the daughter of Henry the eighth by Catherine of Aragon, and his first-born child, lies within a very narrow compass. Her reign was short, and undistinguished by any remarkable feature either of the State policy, or military fortune, from which the fame of Monarchs is usually derived. Her private life was yet more barren of circumstance, and so her character has remained wholly unknown to us. Could it then have been unfair or rash to conclude, to use a common but homely phrase, that she had no character at all? Surely we might have reasonably argued that had she possessed any one remarkable quality of mind, or shone in any acquired accomplishment, the facts could scarcely have been concealed from us; that the deserts of Princes never want recorders, and that her friends, and partizans, who then covered more than half the face of Europe, had, in addition to all ordinary motives to celebrate her, the powerful incentive of a party spirit the most active and heated, because it was founded in religious zeal. Nor could it have been answered to those remarks that their opponents, who at least equalled them in fury, would certainly not have omitted to publish to the world her deficiencies, for the rejoinder was ready that doubtless they would, had they been able, but that to them she was unknown and inaccessible. To all this might be fairly added that a living author, of the Catholic Faith, who to every other merit of an historian adds that of perfect candour, inferentially admits the justice of this supposed view of her by confining his report of her qualifications to the remarks that "she understood the Italian, and spoke the French and Spanish languages, knew the Latin, and played well on the lute and the monochord," without at all

QUEEN MARY.

adverting to her natural talents These negative presumptions against her, which, in combination, have always had on my mind and on those of most others the effect of proof, have been in a moment dispersed and overthrown by two documents in the very recent publication of "Original Letters" from the British Museum It is on such evidence only that the truth of history becomes undeniable

Since the death of her father, incessant efforts had been made, in the name of the young Edward, to induce her to the protestant profession. It was at length determined to deal sternly with her, and on the twenty-eighth of August, 1551, she having some days before addressed to her brother a letter of denial, perhaps in all respects the best epistolary relique extant of the age and land in which she lived, three Privy Counsellors, with the Chancellor Rich at their head, waited on her at her house of Copthall in Essex, once more to argue with her, and, if she continued refractory, to signify to her the King's resolution to prohibit the Mass in her family, and to dismiss her priests, as he had already such of the lay officers of her household as had refused to conform. We have in the very curious collection in question, not only the letter just now alluded to, but the narrative composed by those ministers, at great length, and with minute exactness, of their conversation with her, for the inspection of the King in Council on their return, a conversation in which, alone and unaided, she had to contend with three experienced statesmen on a subject of all others the most important in her estimation to her present welfare, and to her future hopes.

They commenced by delivering to her a letter from her brother, which she knelt to receive, and kissed. "I kiss it," said she, "for the honour of the King's Majesty's hand, and not for the matter contained in it, for that I take to proceed not from his Majesty, but from you his Council" On silently reading it, struck, as it should seem, by some particular passage, she remarked sarcastically, as to herself, "Ah! good Mr. Cecil took much

pains here." On the Chancellor's beginning to open their instructions, she desired him to be short, "for," said she, "I am not well at ease, and I will make you a short answer." He proceeded to apprize her of the privations to which it was intended to subject her, and was about to inform her who were the counsellors present when the resolutions to that effect were made; but she stopt him short, saying, "I care not for any rehearsal of their names I know you all to be of one sort therein." Then, having warmly declared her utter obedience and submission to the King, saving her conscience, she added "when the King's Majesty shall come to such years that he may be able to judge these things himself, his Majesty shall find me ready to obey his orders in religion; but now, in these years, although he, good sweet King, have more knowledge than any other of his years, yet it is not possible that he can be a judge of these things: for if ships were to be sent to the seas, or any other thing to be done touching the policy and government of the realm, I am sure you would not think his Highness yet able to consider what were to be done, and much less can he in these years discern what is fit in matters of divinity." After much more conversation on minor points, in which she used the same caution and vivacity in her replies, the Chancellor turned the discourse on the Emperor, to whom she insisted that a promise had been given for her freedom in religion, of which she cited particular proofs, which being controverted by Rich, she became warm, and said "I have the Emperor's hand testifying that this promise was made, which I believe better than all you of the Council; and, though you esteem little the Emperor, yet should you shew more favour to me for my father's sake, who made the more part of you almost of nothing." They then proposed to send some one to supply the place of Sir Robert Rochester, the comptroller of her household, and one of the officers of whom they had deprived her; but she answered that she would appoint her own officers, and if any such man were left there she would "go out of her gates," for they two

QUEEN MARY.

would not dwell in one house She soon after left them, having first, again on her knees, delivered to the Chaneellor a ring for Edward, and they proceeded to give several strict orders to her chaplains, and others about her, and, when in the court, on their departure, Mary called them to a window, and desired them to procure the return of her comptroller, "for," said she, "since his departing I take the accounts myself of my expences, and have learned how many loaves of bread be made of a bushel of wheat, and I wis my father and my mother never brought me up with baking and brewing, and, to be plain with you, I am weary of mine office, and therefore if my Lords will send mine officer home they will do me pleasure, otherwise, if they will send him to prison, I beshrew him if he go not to it merrily, and with a good will, and I pray God to send you to do well in your souls and bodies too, for some of you have but weak bodies"

Having meant to give incontrovertible proof that the powers of her mind and understanding were of no ordinary class, I forbear to insert the letter which preceded this conversation, because it is possible, even probable, that she might have been largely assisted in the composition of it, or even that it might have been wholly the work of another pen It is needless to observe that verbal communication admits of no such doubt, and for the genuineness of the Chaneellor's narrative, we have the books of the Privy Council, in which the original is recorded It is then ascertained that Mary possessed prudence, presence of mind, quickness of apprehension, acute feelings, and an undaunted courage, and that she joined to them extensive powers of expression, and a lofty sense of the dignity of her station. What then, when her persecution had ceased, and she had mounted an almost absolute throne, intervened to arrest the exercise of those faculties, to render the whole of her reign inglorious, and even insignificant, and herself, were it not for one lamentable class of exceptions, a cypher in history? Simply an attachment to the faith in which her mother had sedulously bred her, so constant,

QUEEN MARY

so ardent, so exclusive, as to engross every passion and sentiment, and to cast an impervious veil over her true character. But I have perhaps dwelt too long on this discussion. It is at all events time to glance at the most important parts of the story of her public life.

Mary's reign, historically speaking, commenced on the death of her brother, Edward, on the sixth of July, 1553, but, as the shadow of ephemeral authority which had been forced on Jane Grey by her father and Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, and the circumstances which produced it's rise and fall, have been so lately and largely treated of in the Memoirs respectively appropriated in this work to those three eminent persons, it will perhaps be better to refer the reader to those Memoirs than to trouble him with an imperfect repetition of the substance of them in this place. Those great events occupied scarcely a month, at the end of which, Mary triumphantly entered London, and may be said to have mounted the throne. She had made no secret of her intention to restore the ancient religion, and the nation therefore, however chagrined, was not disappointed when they saw the Catholic Prelates, the chief of whom had been long prisoners, not only restored to freedom, but to their respective sees. Of these Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, a man whose character has been so disguised amidst the furious contention of parties as to leave us nothing certain but that he possessed consummate sagacity, was appointed to the custody of the Great Seal, and chosen by the Queen as her most confidential minister. In the mean time she regulated her conduct in all matters of high importance by the advice of her near kinsman the Emperor Charles the fifth, to whose interference on her behalf she had been much indebted during her late sufferings, and who now granted his good offices with increased alacrity in furtherance of a view which he had conceived of obtaining her hand for his son Philip of Spain. Mary, from policy, as well as dislike to her sister Elizabeth, had resolved, and from the hour of her accession

QUEEN MARY.

declared, her resolution to marry. On whom she should fix her choice had been already the subject of frequent deliberation in her Council. Several foreign Princes had been proposed, and, of her countrymen, Cardinal Pole, who it happened had not been debarred by priest's orders, and the son of the attainted Marquis of Exeter, the young Edward Courtenay, whom on her arrival in London, she had created Earl of Devonshire, and towards whom she had long manifested an evident partiality. Pole was rejected on the score of his too advanced age, and Courtenay is said to have lost her favour through the irregularity of his private life. Previously to these discussions she had secretly solicited the opinion of the Emperor on this important question, and before they had terminated, received his answer, recommending his son, whom she agreed to accept. He advised her also to proceed in the restoration of the old religion with cautious and gentle steps, but here unhappily she was less compliant.

She had however hitherto done no very material public act to that effect, though the reformers had imprudently offered her a pretext by assaulting in the pulpit one of her chaplains who narrowly escaped with his life. This forbearance however was but of short duration. Six Bishops were thrown into prison for impugning the revived Church, and among them the Primate Cranmer, and Ridley, both of whom it is true had added to that offence their earnest endeavours in favour of the title of Jane Grey. The Princess Elizabeth, on whose firmness in the reformed faith the protestants had built their best hopes, now affected to abandon it, and was received into the regal favour. The meeting of Mary's first Parliament was distinguished by the celebration of high Mass before both Houses, their addresses were filled with acknowledgements of the Queen's piety, and their first enactments were an unanimous declaration of the Queen's legitimacy; the annulment of the divorce of her father and mother, and a bill for the resumption of divine service as used at the time of the death of Henry the eighth. The marriage of priests

QUEEN MARY.

was again declared unlawful, and a visitation appointed to enforce the prescribed mode of worship. The return to the church of Rome might therefore be now esteemed nearly complete in all but the acknowledgement of the Pope's supremacy, a faculty less likely to be so readily conceded either by Prince or people. In the meantime the negotiations for the royal marriage proceeded slowly, and were encountered at every step by adversaries, foreign as well as domestic. The English in their dread of the rule of a stranger Prince, forgot for a while their religious dissensions, and many of Mary's most zealous friends, even in her Council, with Gardiner at their head, strongly opposed the match, while Henry the second of France, the inveterate rival of the Emperor, used the most subtle agents to intrigue against it in London. The House of Commons voted an address, beseeching her to prefer an English consort, but her determination was unalterable, and, it is even said, that on the same evening she sent secretly for the Imperial Ambassador into her private oratory, and in his presence affianced herself to Philip at the foot of the Altar. Shortly after, she dissolved the Parliament.

The public annunciation of the marriage, which soon followed, was the signal for that extensive, but ill planned and worse executed enterprise known by the name of Wyatt's insurrection. Whether it was undertaken with Elizabeth's knowledge is one among many mysterious questions which it involved, and which will probably never be satisfactorily answered. Certain however it is that she was suspected, imprisoned, and closely questioned on it, and that the Queen thenceforward withdrew from her almost all appearance of kindness. She is said to have been spared from a public trial at the intercession of Gardiner.

A Parliament was now called, which proved less complaisant than its predecessor. It ratified without scruple the treaty for the Queen's marriage, but rejected almost all other measures proposed by the ministers, among which were bills for enabling the Queen to dispose of the Crown by her will, for the revival

QUEEN MARY.

of the dreaded Six Articles ; and of the ancient laws against the Lollards. Mary therefore dissolved it at the end of one month, and prepared with much anxiety for the arrival of her consort, who, after long and apparently unnecessary delays, arrived, and was received by her with a fondness which it soon became evident was unksome to him. He was presently followed by Pole, in the character of Legate, another Parliament was assembled, and now the reconciliation to the See of Rome was consummated by a number of laws, the most important of which was for the restoration to the Pope of the ecclesiastical supremacy. It had been contemplated even to re-invest the Church with the estates of which it had been deprived by the reformation, and the proposal would have been made to this Parliament but for the prudence of Gardiner.

The Queen seemed now nearly to have attained to the height of her wishes, and, to crown her satisfaction, imagined herself to be pregnant. Her consort, if deficient in genuine tenderness, used at present towards her that scrupulous attention which in highly bred persons so nearly resembles it that only the most refined sentiment can make the distinction. He had successfully courted popularity by several acts of beneficence, in particular by procuring the release of Elizabeth from confinement, and the prejudices against him seemed to wear gradually away. Mary however was not yet content. She had the misfortune to live in an age, when the cruel punishment of offenders against any mode of faith which had acquired a distinct denomination seems to have been considered by the professors of that faith as a religious duty, for all agreed in inflicting it. Her temper too, which is said not to have been of the best, was perhaps somewhat disposed to revenge, and the reformers had not spared provocation. She unhappily determined to put into execution some penal laws with which her new Parliament had lately armed her. Of her two chief counsellors in ecclesiastical affairs, Pole is said to have dissuaded, Gardiner to have urged her forward. A

persecution, truly so called, of the protestants ensued, from the detail of which, as it is perhaps more generally known than that of any other prominent part of our history, I wholly forbear, observing only that in it's progress two hundred and seventy-seven persons of various ranks, among whom five were Bishops, are reckoned to have perished at the stake, not to mention multitudes who were punished by fine, imprisonment, or confiscation

Mary's supposed pregnancy now proved to be no more than a manifestation of disease, and her consequent vexation was aggravated by the immediate departure for Flanders of Philip, whom she had for some months past with difficulty persuaded to remain with her till after her expected delivery. Her affection for him was so extravagant that it seemed but to increase in proportion to his growing indifference, of which she had now frequent proofs. The celebrated resignation of his father at this precise period had made him the most powerful and wealthy Monarch in Europe, but, instead of imparting to her any share of his advantages, he suffered her to fall into necessities, and to disgrace herself by acts of rapacity for relief. He refused or neglected her most trifling requests, and seldom deigned even the courtesy of replying to her fond letters. The death of Gardiner, not long after Philip left her, filled up the measure of her chagrin, and she fell into a deep melancholy. She had however still strength of mind enough to struggle faintly against it. She plunged into public business; made many requests of the Commons, which were either refused, or granted only in part; and dissolved another Parliament. She re-established and endowed several religious Houses; and devoted herself with increased earnestness to the restoration of her religion. A plot to depose her, and to place Elizabeth on the throne, was now discovered, and two of the conspirators were officers of the household of the Princess. Elizabeth, once more in danger, was again saved by the interference of Philip, to whom since the recent marriage of the Dauphin to Mary Queen of Scots, who stood next to her in

QUEEN MARY.

succession to the English Crown, her life had become peculiarly valuable. The King of France, who had included Mary in his hatred to Spain, was discovered to have been privy to this conspiracy, as well as to various schemes by Mary's self-banished protestant subjects, for surprising some of the English garrisons on the French coast, and to a late impotent invasion by them on the coast of Yorkshire. Philip, long desirous to chastise him, took the advantage of his consort's irritation at these injuries to persuade her to join him in a war against France, and for that purpose made her once more a visit, which she had been long vainly soliciting

Mary and her Council readily agreed to the proposal. A powerful English Fleet presently ranged itself on the French coast, and seven thousand men, under the command of the Earl of Pembroke, were dispatched to join Philip's army, which, in the very opening of the campaign, gained the signal victory of St Quintin, where the celebrated old Constable de Montmoreney, who commanded in chief, and many other of the prime nobility of France, fell into the hands of the conquerors. This event was so unexpected, and, on many accounts, so important, that the news was received at Paris not only with deep regret, but even with terror. Great exertions were made to prepare that capital itself for an attack, and the King dispatched orders to the Duke of Guise to return instantly from Italy, with the army which he commanded there. He came, and exacted from Mary a heavy retribution indeed for the share which she had taken in the infliction of the late disgrace on his country. By a series of artifices, planned and executed with the most profound military skill of his time, he enabled himself to appear most unexpectedly before Calais, while a number of ships which were cruising on the Coast, apparently for the purpose of watching the motions of the English at sea, collected together at an appointed time, and attacked it on that side. Military history has few examples of a surprise at once so sudden and so successful, and thus was

QUEEN MARY.

lost to England in eight days, in the depth of winter, that important fortress, with its valuable dependencies, which she had held for two centuries, not less to the gratification of her national pride than to the service of her public interests.

Mary, who had been long afflicted with dropsy, was gradually sinking when this sad event happened. It afflicted her most severely, and is said to have hastened her dissolution. This report however probably arose from the well-known observation which she uttered on her death-bed, that if her breast were opened, the word "Calais" would be found written on her heart, for she survived till the seventeenth of November, 1558, ten months after the occurrence of the misfortune.



Page 111 of 111

WILLIAM FIRST LORD PAGET

OB 1563

FROM THE ORIGINAL OF HOLBEIN IN THE COLLECTION OF

HIS MOST NOBLE THE MARQUIS OF ANGLSEA

WILLIAM, FIRST LORD PAGET.

THE character of this eminent Statesman was drawn about sixty years after his death by a writer who sometimes sacrificed the sacred veracity of biography to his love of that forcible and terse method of expression in which he excelled, and whom therefore I never quote, unless his assertions can be supported by the genuine evidence of history. "His education," says Lloyd, "was better than his birth, his knowledge higher than his education, his parts above his knowledge, and his experience beyond his parts. A general learning furnished him for travel, and travel seasoned him for employment. His masterpiece was an inward observation of other men, and an exact knowledge of himself. His address was with state, yet insinuating; his discourse free, but weighed, his apprehension quick, but stayed, his ready and present mind keeping its pauses of thoughts and expressions even with the occasion and the emergency, neither was his carriage more stiff and uncompliant than his soul." The eulogist might have added, without hazard of contradiction, that a more faithful and honest minister never existed.

He owed nothing to the influence either of ancestry or wealth, but sprang from a very private family in Staffordshire, from whence his father, a native of Wednesbury, in that county, migrated to London, and obtained there the office of Serjeant at Mace in the corporation. William, his eldest son, the subject of this memoir, was born in that city in 1506, and commenced his education in St. Paul's school, under the celebrated Lilly, from whence he was removed to Trinity Hall, in Cambridge. At this early period of his life, the foundation of his future eminence was laid. By some means, long since forgotten, he became known

WILLIAM, FIRST LORD PAGET.

to Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, perhaps not only the first scholar, as well as the most acute statesman of his time, but a zealous cultivator also of those more elegant branches of literature which were then little professed in England. He was received into the family of that prelate, and, after a time, sent under his auspices to complete his education in the University of Paris, from whence he returned again into the Bishop's house. Bred under the wing of Gardiner, it is not strange that he should have contracted a strong attachment to the ancient faith of his country. He practised it, under all the extraordinary varieties of its fortune which distinguished his time, with inflexible constancy, but with a mildness and moderation towards its opponents which marked the goodness of his heart.

In 1530, then but at the age of twenty-four, the King, doubtless through the recommendation of Gardiner, sent him into France, to collect the opinions of the most learned and experienced jurists of that kingdom on the great question of the proposed divorce, and rewarded him on his return with the appointment of a Clerk of the Signet, which was afterwards confirmed to him for his life. He seems to have been no otherwise employed till 1537, when he was dispatched, with great privacy, into Germany, to foment the discord which then subsisted between the Emperor and the Protestant Princes, and to endeavour to persuade them to refer their differences to the mediation of Henry, and the King of France. In 1541 the offices of Clerk of the Privy Council, and Clerk of the Signet, were conferred on him, as was soon after that of Clerk of the Parliament for life, in the following year he was sent ambassador into France; and in 1543, in which year he was knighted, was appointed one of the two principal Secretaries of State. His distinguished skill, however, in foreign diplomacy confined him chiefly to that line of public service during the remainder of Henry's reign. In the summer of 1545 he negotiated, in concert with the Chancellor Wriothesley, and the Duke of Suffolk, the

WILLIAM, FIRST LORD PAGET.

terms of the marriage of the Princess Margaret to Matthew Stuart, Earl of Lenox, and many other important matters relative to Scotland, and was soon after joined in commission with the Earl of Hertford to manage that treaty with France which, for the time, was rendered fruitless by the French King's positive demand of the restitution of Boulogne. In the succeeding June, however, the peace was concluded, chiefly under his direction. Henry, who survived that important act but for a few months, appointed Sir William Paget an executor to his Will, and one of the council to his minor successor.

The strict intimacy and confidence in which he had long lived with the Earl of Hertford, uncle to the young King, and now Protector of him, and of the realm, opened to him a new channel of favour. He was chosen a Knight of the Garter on Edward's accession, and soon after resigned his office of Secretary of State, and was appointed Comptroller of the Royal Household, and Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster: a singular exchange, which we may probably ascribe to the inconvenient interruptions to the duties of a Secretary of State which must have arisen from his frequent nomination to foreign missions. He was in fact dispatched within very few months to the Emperor, in the character of Ambassador Extraordinary, to persuade that Prince to join in an alliance against France, and, though the negotiation wholly failed, left that court with a splendor of general reputation which perhaps no other foreign minister in any time has enjoyed. Of this we have abundant proof in the letters of Sir Philip Hoby, then Resident Ambassador there, extracts from which may be found in *Stripe's Memorials*, and Lloyd, the writer lately quoted, tells us that Charles "once cried, in a rapture, that he deserved to be a King, as well as to represent one," and, one day, as he came to court, "yonder is the man I can deny nothing to." A short extract from one of his letters to the Protector during his embassy, which is preserved in the Harleian MSS. while it lets us somewhat into the character of his mind, seems to

WILLIAM, FIRST LORD PAGET.

prove that he could not have purchased much of his favour at the Court of Brussels by flattery. After having recited much at large some former conferences with the Emperour's ministers, he says

“ The day following d'Arras, accompanied w^t Mons^r St. Maurice, came to my lodging, and, albeit I was the day before somewhat moved, yet, hoping thei had brought some resolution, I quieted myself, and after salutac^ons, and wordes of office, I beganne to give ear what thei wolde say; when sodainly d'Arras, after a great circumstancie, and many goodly painted wordes, entred th^e excuse of my longe abode here w^tout answeire to my charge, w^{ch} he affirmed was occasioned by th^e Emp^{or}'s businesse aboute the Prince's swearing in thies townes; and prayed us therefore on his Ma.^{tie}'s behalf, to take patience untill his coming to Bruxelles, when, without faile, he said I sholde be dispatched W^{ch} when I hearde, and p^{er}ceiving, in steade of the resoluc^on and answer that I looked for, to be only fed w^t faire wordes, I must confesse unto yo^r Grace I colde not keepe patience, but, being entred somewhat into coler, answered him that I was now here at th^e Emp^{or}'s will and com^{mand}me^{nt}. He might stay me as long as it liked him, and dispatche me when he liste: But, q^d I, were I once at home, I know that neither the King's Ma.^{tie} wold sende me hither, nor I, for my part, to wyne an hundredth thousande crownes, come againe aboute eine' like matter, considering how coldly the same hitherto proceeded, and suerly I am sure that either ye sholde judge me so void of wit that I colde not perceive wherunto this childishe excuse tendeth, or occasion me to suppose you so much w^tout consideration as to thinke I colde be brought to beleave that the Prince's swearing colde be eine' delay to the answering of thies things that I am come hither for; a matter easie enough to be perceived of such as never had eine' experience of the worlde, etc. Hereunto d'Arras very coldly answered that, in good faythe, the cause of my staye, whatsoever I thought, was onely such as he had shewed me, and therefore

praised me not to conceive any other opinion; for I assure you, q^d he, the Emp^{or} beareth the King, his good brother, asmuchie affec^{tion} as if he were his sonn, and wolde gladly ayde and assiste him in all things to the uttermost that he maye conveniently. But, q^d he, thies matters are weightie, and requere to be answered unto w^t deliberac^{on}. Yf thei seemed as weightie unto you as ye speake, q^d I, I cannot judge but ye wolde er this time have spied out some tme to answeere unto them, and, as for th' Emp^{or}'s assistance, my M^r requy^{reth} it not ciné other waies then shall appere to be requisite and beneficiall for both parties; and therefore, if the ocession of this long dely be uppon einé other considerac^{on} then ye have yet declared unto us, I wolde wishe ye delte like frendes, and opened the same frankely: and I knowe, q^d I, that thies matters were concluded before Mons^r G.'s departme, w^{ch} maketh me more to muse why ye sholde so longe stay from making reaport of yo^r answeere," &c.

On his return from Brussels he was called by writ to the House of Peers, by the title of Baron Paget, of Beaudesert, in Staffordshire, and was immediately after appointed a commissioner to treat for the accomodation of new differences which had arisen between England and France. But the fend between the Protector and Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, which had long divided Edward's court and council, had now risen to its height, and the former sunk under the boldness and the artifices of his mighty adversary. Lord Paget necessarily, for such was the custom of the time, shared in the misfortune of his friend. He was committed to the Fleet Prison on the twenty-first of October, 1551, and some weeks after, removed to the Tower, where he remained a prisoner, without a cause assigned, for five months, at the end of which he was divested of the Order of the Garter, on the ground of insufficiency of blood, charged with corruption and embezzlement in his office of the Duchy, and sentenced in the star-chamber to a fine of six thousand pounds. These severities had no other object than to terrify the small remnant of the

WILLIAM, FIRST LORD PAGET

Protector's party into obedience till the power of the Duke of Northumberland should be firmly settled, for in December, 1552, Lord Paget obtained a general pardon, with the exception only of debts to the King, which was inserted but to save appearances, for it should seem that the fine with which he had been most unjustly charged was almost wholly remitted. It remained, however, to Mary to restore to him the Garter, which was done with great ceremony, at a chapter of the order held at St James's, on the twenty-seventh of September, 1553, six weeks after she mounted the throne, when it appears to have been for the first time admitted, certainly to the honour of the order, that no objection on the score of birth ought to be allowed to supersede the claims of transcendent personal merit.

Mary, indeed, could not but have been prompted to favour him, equally by her interests and her prejudices. He had appeared among the first to assert her disputed title to the throne, and had hastened to her presence to give her the earliest notice of her having been proclaimed Queen in London. He had been persecuted by her bitterest enemies, and was distinguished by the most steadfast adherence to that faith the maintenance of which was unhappily the first object of her life. She received him into her utmost confidence. He was appointed to manage the treaty of her marriage with Philip of Spain, was sent Ambassador, immediately after, to the Emperor, his father, to agitate certain points tending to the re-establishment of the Papal authority in England, and, soon after his return, was appointed Lord Privy Seal. Though a warm advocate for the Spanish match, which indeed had been chiefly planned by himself and his old friend Gardiner, he entertained a becoming jealousy of Philip, and expressed it, when necessary, with a bold and honourable frankness. That Prince, who undoubtedly meditated by marrying Mary to make himself master of England, had applied to the Parliament, when she was supposed to be pregnant, for an act to constitute him Regent till the child should be of age to

govern; and proposed to give security for his surrender of the Regency when that period might arrive. The motion, which had been largely debated in the House of Peers, was likely to be carried, when Lord Paget suddenly rose, and said, " Pray who shall sue the King's bond ?" These few words changed the temper of the House, and it was negatived.

On the accession of Elizabeth he withdrew himself voluntarily from the public service. That Princess, says Camden, " entertained an affection and value for him, though he was a strict zealot of the Romish Church." After six years of retirement, he died on the ninth of June, 1563, and was buried, according to the direction of his will, at Drayton, in Middlesex. Fuller, who is frequently incorrect, informs us that he was very aged, but the inscription on a superb monument erected to his memory in Litchfield Cathedral, which was destroyed in the general wreck of the interior of that church in the grand rebellion, states, according to a copy preserved in the family of Hatton, that he died in his fifty-eighth year.

Lord Paget married Anne, daughter and heiress of Henry Preston, a descendant of the house of Preston, of Preston, in Yorkshire, by whom he had four sons, and six daughters. Henry, the eldest, died without issue, having only for five years enjoyed his father's dignity and estates, which then fell to Thomas, the second son, lineal ancestor of the present Earl of Uxbridge. That nobleman, together with his next brother, Charles, was deeply engaged in the cause of the Queen of Scots, and was attainted in 1587, and restored by James, immediately on his accession. Edward, the fourth son, died young. For the daughters, Etheldreda was married to Sir Christopher Allen; Joan, to Sir Thomas Kitson; Anne, to Sir Henry Lee, Eleanor, first to Jerome Palmer, secondly, to Sir Rowland Clerk; Dorothy, to Thomas, a son of Sir Henry Willoughby, of Wollaton, in Nottinghamshire, and Grizel, first to Sir Thomas Rivet, and then to Sir William Waldegrave.



EDWARD, FIRST LORD NORTH

EDWARD, FIRST LORD NORTH

OB 1761

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLECTION OF

THE RIGHT HON^{BLE} THE EARL OF GUILFORD

EDWARD, FIRST LORD NORTH.

EDWARD NORTH, the founder of a house in which it is difficult to find a single individual undistinguished by wisdom or wit, or stained by any memorable fault or error, was the only son of Roger North, a younger brother of a respectable family, which had seated itself in the reign of Edward the fourth at Walkingham, in Nottinghamshire, by Christian, daughter of Richard Warcup, of Seonington, in Kent, and was born about the year 1496. He lost his father, who was in some mercantile profession, and seems to have been an inhabitant of London, in 1509, and, probably because he was too young to follow the same calling, was placed in a course of studies to qualify him for the practice of the law, which he finished at Peter-house, in the University of Cambridge. He soon acquired a considerable reputation at the bar, and was appointed, while yet a very young man, advocate for the city of London. It is very likely that his interest with that corporation might have been forwarded by an alderman of the name of Wilkinson, who had married one of his sisters, and still more probable that he was first introduced to the ministers of Henry the eighth by Thomas Burnet, Auditor of the Exchequer, who was the husband of another. However this might have been, it is certain that in 1531 he was made one of the two joint Clerks of the Parliament, an office then of such respectability that it was frequently held in that reign by men of the first rank in public employment. Four years afterwards he was called to the station of one of the King's Sergeants at law, in 1541 resigned his clerkship of the Parliament, and was appointed Treasurer of the Court of Augmentations, and in the following year was knighted, and elected a representative for the County of Cambridge

EDWARD, FIRST LORD NORTH.

The Court of Augmentations was a temporary establishment instituted upon the dissolution of religious houses, and was so named from the augmentation of the income of the Crown by the assumption of their property, of all matters concerned in which it had the superintendence. The most consummate integrity, and the most vigilant application, were requisite in those who were to receive suddenly this enormous influx of various wealth, and to methodize and direct a new system of revenue. For the performance of these duties Henry chose Sir Edward North, and in 1545 nominated him to the office of Chancellor of that Court, jointly with Sir Richard Rich, on whose resignation, a few months after, the sole jurisdiction devolved on him. He was now called to the Privy Council, and distinguished by a degree of favour and confidence enjoyed by very few of Henry's servants in those years of caprice and cruelty which closed that Prince's reign. Indeed his character and temper seem to have well qualified him to deal with the extravagances of such a master, for his prudence was perhaps of the sort usually called worldly wisdom, and his compliance approached to servility; but those faults appear to have been the consequences rather of a timid than a selfish disposition, since there is good reason to believe that his public conduct was eminently disinterested, and his honesty was not only unimpeached, but unsuspected. Had his conscience been less nice, or his nature more daring, he might have amassed immense wealth: he contented himself however with the fair emoluments of his office, and with grants, comparatively to no great amount, of abbey lands. Henry left him a final token of esteem by appointing him one of the executors of his will, and a counsellor to the infant Edward.

In the short reign of that Prince he remained a wary and passive observer of the party contests by which it was agitated; and when the King's death produced a crisis in which no man of his degree could stand neuter, he espoused the pretensions to the Crown which had been forced on the unfortunate Jane Grey, and

EDWARD, FIRST LORD NORTH.

was one of the Privy Counsellors who signed a letter to Mary, declaring their allegiance to her unwilling rival. For some reason of policy however, long since forgotten, Mary, on her accession to the throne, not only received him into her Privy Council, but on the seventeenth of February, 1553, O. S. the first year of her reign, summoned him to Parliament, by the title of Baron North of Kirtling, now called Catlage, in the County of Cambridge, which till that period he had continued to represent in the House of Commons. In this and the following reigns we find him also rather in the character of a courtier than a statesman. That Elizabeth held him in some degree of favour is proved by her having conferred on him, in her second year, the office of Lord Lieutenant of Cambridgeshire, and the Isle of Ely, but she employed him in no other public capacity.

He was now verging on old age, and in declining health. On the twentieth of March, 1564, O. S. he made his will, and here, as in all the rest, left abundant proof of the caution which seems to have been the leading feature of his character, by the creation of an entail, equally remarkable, considering the custom of his time in such matters, for its strictness and extent; for the terms in which it is expressed; and for his exhortations to his heir "to beware of pride, and prodigal expences." The same spirit directed him in matrimonial choice. His first wife, whom he married when a young man, was the widow of two husbands, but very wealthy; Alice, daughter of Oliver Squey, of Southby, in Hampshire, who had been first married to Edward, son of Sir John Myrffin, an Alderman of London, and, secondly, to John Brigadin, of Southampton: His second, who survived him till 1575, was even in her third widowhood; Margaret, daughter of Richard Butler, of London; who, as we are informed by her epitaph in the chancel of St. Laurence Jewry, had been successively wife to Andrew Francis; Robert Chartsey, an Alderman; and Sir David Brooke, Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer. By her he had no issue, but his first Lady brought him two sons, and two daughters:

EDWARD, FIRST LORD NORTH

Roger, his successor, a nobleman of distinguished high spirit and bravery, and Sir Thomas, who was bred a lawyer, but is better remembered as the translator of Plutarch's Lives, Guevara's *Horologium Principum*, and for other literary labours. The daughters were Christian, married to William Somerset, third Earl of Worcester, and Mary, to Henry, Lord Scroope of Bolton. Lord North died, at his house in the Charter-house, London, on the thirty-first of December, 1561, and was buried in the chancel of the parish Church of Kintling, or Catlage.

Some account of the life of this nobleman was written, "sensibly, and in a good style," as Lord Orford observes, and published by his great great grandson, Dudley, fourth Lord North. From that small work, which is composed with the pardonable partiality of a descendant, I will give a short extract, which points to the portrait here engraved, and furnishes some circumstances which ought to have a place in this memoir. "By his picture," says Dudley, "whereof there is yet a copy remaining, he appears to have been a person of a moderate stature, somewhat inclined to corpulency, and a reddish hair. As to his character, it can only appear from what has been said of him, and his letters shew he rather affected the delivery of a full and clear sense than any curiosity of style or expression. The bravery of his mind may be best judged of by his delight to live in an equipage rather above than under his condition and degree, and by his magnificence in buildings, which were very noble for materials and workmanship, as may appear by the two houses he set up at Kintling and Charter-house. His piety, charity, and love of learning, is evident from his bestowing the parsonage of Burwell on the University of Cambridge, as also the vicarage of Burwell, and to Peter-house, the ancientest College of that University, as a token of gratitude for what he gathered there in the way of learning, the parsonage of Ellington. He provided chapels in such houses he built, which shews a desire in him of an assiduity in the service of God by himself and family, which care of providing peculiar



Engraved by H. Robinson

HENRY STUART LORD DARNLEY,
KING OF SCOTLAND

OB 1567

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLECTION OF
THE RIGHT HON^{BLE} THE LATE EARL OF SEAFORTH

HENRY STUART,

(LORD DARNLEY)

KING OF SCOTLAND.

It would be impertinent, especially in such a work as this, to endeavour to treat the story of this weak and insignificant young man's life with historical or political exactness. All the public importance which belonged to him fell on him as by reflection, and, although he was the first cause of several great events, he was an active instrument in none. Suddenly raised to an empty regal title by a passion which did not deserve the name of love; doated on, despised, the object at once of idolatry, and of fear and jealousy, without judgement to ward off the dangers with which the perverseness of his fate surrounded him, and without temper to bear the contempt to which the imbecility of his character exposed him, as he rose without merit, so he fell unpitied, and, but for collateral circumstances, would have been long since wholly forgotten.

He was of royal descent, and nearly enough related both to Elizabeth and Mary to awaken and justify the caution and vigilance of each. His father was Matthew Stuart, Earl of Lennox; his mother, Margaret, daughter to Archibald Douglas, Earl of Angus, by Queen Margaret, sister of our Henry the eighth, who married that nobleman soon after the death of her first husband, James the fourth of Scotland. Lennox, when a young man, had been compelled to take refuge in the Court of Henry by the fury of the Hamilton faction, from whose head, the Duke of Chatelherault, he had attempted to wrest the regency of Scotland in the early infancy of Mary. The illustrious match which he made there, and the distractions of his own country, where he was

HENRY STUART, (LORD DARNLEY)

attainted, had detained him for many years in England, and there his eldest son, Henry, was born and educated. Elizabeth, on her accession, found this distinguished family quietly seated in her dominions, and treated them with an urbanity and respect in the motives to which her policy with regard to Scotland was not overlooked. The prime object of that policy at the period of which we are about to speak was the prevention of the marriage of Mary, and she pursued it with the dissimulation and artifice which invariably marked her conduct towards that unhappy Princess. She affected to press for it, even with anxiety, and, among those whom she proposed to Mary, as worthy of her hand, was Lord Darnley, for by that title, one of his father's, Henry was then designated.

Mary had long endeavoured, and very prudently, to gain the friendship of the family of Lennox. She lent therefore a willing ear to this recommendation. Lennox and his son obtained Elizabeth's permission to visit Scotland, and in the month of February, 1565, waited on Mary, then on a progress in the shire of Fife, at Wemyss. She had never before seen Darnley. He was in the twenty-first year of his age, a pattern of masculine beauty both in face and person, and accomplished to perfection in all the niceties of artificial politeness. She beheld him in the instant with all the infatuation of a doating lover, determined almost as suddenly to give him her hand, and presently intimated to her Court a resolution of which her conduct towards the youthful stranger had already in some measure apprized them. The match however was delayed by various circumstances. Elizabeth now opposed it even with fury, dispatched a mandate for Darnley's instant return, and chastised his disobedience to it by seizing his father's English estates, and imprisoning his mother and brother, who had remained in London. The most powerful among the protestant Peers of Scotland, at her incitement, conspired to possess themselves by violence of his person; were discovered; and fled into England before a military force

KING OF SCOTLAND.

It was necessary too to obtain the approbation of the main body of the Scottish nobility, and some time was lost in their deliberations, and much more in the result of them the sending to Rome for a dispensation, the parties being within the prohibited degrees of kindred. These obstacles however were finally removed, and on the twenty-eighth or twenty-ninth of July they were married, and on the following day publicly proclaimed, by the styles of Henry and Mary, King and Queen of Scotland.

Mary, deeply enamoured as she was, could not have been wholly insensible of Darnley's defects. It is even possible that the very contemplation of them increased her anxiety to hasten her marriage. Determined at all events to possess him, she dreaded perhaps that himself might prevent it by some act of folly or violence too gross to admit of extenuation, and suffered herself to be deluded by the excess of her passion into the vanity of believing that her influence in the joint relations of a Queen, a wife, and a lover, might in future restrain such excesses. He had already fallen into serious errors. Several of the prime nobility had been disgusted by his insolent anticipation of the aims of royalty, he had joined a faction against the Earl of Murray, Mary's illegitimate brother, and the leader of the Scottish reformers, whose good will it was peculiarly important to him to cultivate; and in the meantime had disgraced himself by forming a strict intimacy with Mary's secretary for French affairs, the Italian Rizzio, a man of mean birth and habits, whom her imprudent favour had rendered an object of indignant jealousy in the Court, as well as of popular hatred, he had betrayed a temper even ferocious, in drawing his dagger on a nobleman sent to apprise him that the Queen, in order to temporize with Elizabeth, wished to defer for a while his creation of Duke of Albany, a royal title to which she raised him shortly before their marriage.

The short civil war which, at the instigation of Elizabeth, the exiled protestant Peers returned to raise, presently followed the

HENRY STUART, (LORD DARNLEY)

nuptials. It had little concern with Henry's barren story beyond the simple fact that he was the incidental and passive cause of it. Mary's complete success in the issue of it afforded him a triumph over the House of Hamilton, the ancient enemies of his family, peculiarly gratifying to such a mind as his, and when the Duke of Chatellerauld, who had been among the subdued malcontents, humbly sued for a pardon, he opposed it with furious vehemence, and prevailed on the Queen to qualify it by compelling the Duke to reside in France. Mary's condescension in this, and other affairs, served but to increase his desire of powers which he was incapable to wield. They had been married scarcely three months when he beset her with incessant importunities that he might be declared to possess the Crown Matrimonial, an obscure phrase, peculiar to the Scottish legal law, which denoted however a degree of authority nearly co-ordinate with that of the reigning princess. This it was not in Mary's power to confer but jointly with the Parliament, the consent of which it would have been dangerous to ask, yet he could not brook the disappointment. Domestic quarrels followed. He neglected her person, avoided her society, and fell into unbecoming vices, while that insuperable anger which flows peculiarly from ill-requited love took full possession of her breast, and it was only her contempt of his weakness that spared him from her pure hatred. The short space of seven months sufficed to produce and consummate this excess of contrary passions in the mind of Mary.

The King, unable to act, or at least to think, for himself, soon felt the inconvenience of these commotions. He sought for advice, or rather for support, in the counsels of Rizzio, and was met by cold remonstrances on his own misconduct. No great measure of craft was necessary to induce that foreigner to adopt a course so generally reasonable, as well as so evidently suited to the maintenance of his own interests. Henry however conceived the most rancorous enmity towards him, and presently found

himself unexpectedly at the head of a party whose support he could have little right to expect, and whose attachment to him could scarcely be sincere. It consisted of the Chancellor Morton, and several other powerful Peers, most of them related to him in blood, and all offended by the disappointment, which they ascribed to his weakness or negligence, of that rule in the affairs of Scotland which they had expected to found on his marriage. He readily accepted them as friends, and in the gratification of making him an instrument in the destruction of Rizzio, they forgot for the time their resentment towards himself. They spared no arguments to mortify his pride, or to increase his anger. They aggravated the extent of the Italian's influence in public affairs, and his own insignificance, which they represented as a necessary consequence of that influence. They asserted that he owed to Rizzio's intrigues and malice the denial to him of the Crown Matrimonial. They raised at length in him that maddening flame which of all others is the most easily kindled in the weakest minds they persuaded him that Mary was unfaithful to his bed, and that Rizzio was her paramour. Thus excited, Henry proposed, or at least eagerly agreed, that he should be taken off by assassination. A treaty was regularly concluded between the King and the rest, by which they promised him the Crown Matrimonial, and the independent succession to the Throne, should he outlive the Queen, while he engaged to avow himself, should it become necessary, the author of the conspiracy, and to protect those who had undertaken to act in it

The evening of the ninth of March, 1566, was appointed for the consummation of the bloody enterprise, and never was murder perpetrated with more savage ferocity, nor marked by stronger proofs of national barbarism. It was known that Rizzio was to sup with the Queen, who was now in the sixth month of her pregnancy, and Henry was anxious that he should die in her presence. The Chancellor Morton personally headed the band

HENRY STUART, (LORD DARNLEY)

of soldiers who secured the avenues to the palace, and the King himself led the assassins into Mary's chamber. To complete the horror of the preparations, Lord Ruthven, the King's uncle, who was appointed to strike the first blow, had risen for that purpose from his bed, where he had been long confined by dangerous illness, and followed Henry, led by two men, and covered with armour, except his face, in which a pallid ghastliness was enlivened only by gleams of furious expression. On their entrance, Rizzio started from his seat, and clung to the person of the Queen, behind whose chair Henry, silent and irresolute, had taken his station, but Ruthven, drawing his dagger, commanded his followers to tear the devoted victim from his sanctuary, and, in dragging him into the adjoining room, he perished, pierced by fifty-six wounds. Murray, and his exiled companions, who had been previously apprized of the murderous plan, entered Edinburgh triumphantly on the following day, and Mary was compelled not only to receive them with an affected complacency, but also to admit into her presence Morton and Ruthven, and to promise them a pardon on their own terms.

Incredible as it may seem, such was the address of Mary, and the weakness and perfidy of her consort, that even on the succeeding day, the eleventh of March, she persuaded him to quit the capital privately with her, and to break all the engagements by which he had so lately bound himself to her enemies. They fled to Dunbar, situated in a country deeply devoted to her, and were presently surrounded by a formidable military host, at the head of which they returned towards Edinburgh, Henry, on the way, issuing proclamations in which he disavowed all knowledge of the late enormity, and denounced vengeance against the assassins, who had already again fled into England, then, as still, the land of certain refuge for foreign public offenders. This treachery, however, though used against those whom she detested, served but to increase the odium in which she already held him. Once more in a state of comparative security, she

stripped him of all authority. estranged herself almost entirely from his society, and abandoned him with manifest indifference to the company of some almost unknown persons in whose debaucheries he had been used to share. His resentment was at length roused, and the proofs which he gave of it were such as might have been expected from him, fraught with childish folly, caprice, and indecision. He endeavoured to interest foreign potentates in his behalf, besought them to receive him into their dominions, and was neglected by them. He refused to be present at the pompous baptism of his son, and endeavoured to enrage the Queen by other petty insults. In the mean time Mary's heart, if it may be so said, declared for a new favourite, James Hepburn, Earl of Bothwell, a man whose character had no point of resemblance to that of her husband but one—a total want of principle. With him, painful as it is to be obliged to reject all doubt on such a subject, it cannot be reasonably denied that she concerted the means of depriving Henry of life.

The King had for many weeks resided at Stirling, neglected and almost in solitude, when a rumour suddenly reached him of a design to imprison him. He fled instantly towards Glasgow, where his father was at the time, and was seized on his way thither by a distemper so violent as to render his case for many days utterly hopeless. Mary, by whom he had never been visited during this extremity, on his amendment, and arrival at Glasgow, flew thither, with every profession and appearance of conjugal tenderness; attended him constantly as his nurse; and, as soon as he was able to bear the journey, persuaded him to remove to Edinburgh. He was carried thither in a litter, and lodged, not in the Palace, but under the pretences of obtaining better air and more quiet, in a house, then in the suburbs, belonging to the provost of a collegiate church, called Kirk of Field. There Mary's assiduities were increased. She seldom left him during the day, and sometimes slept in the chamber under that in which he lay. His fears and suspicions, and peevish humours, were

HENRY STUART (LORD DARNLEY)

lulled to rest, and the endearments of their bridal days seemed to be revived, when on Sunday, the ninth of February, 1567, N. S. the Queen left him, about eleven at night, to be present at a masque in the Palace, and at two the next morning the house in which he lay was blown up with gunpowder. The bodies of the King, and of the servant who slept in his chamber, were found at a little distance, perfect, and without any marks of fire, or of violence



Engraved by H. Robinson

JAMES STUART, EARL OF MURRAY

(REGENT OF SCOTLAND)

OB 1570

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLECTION AT

HOLYROOD PALACE EDINBURGH

JAMES STUART,

EARL OF MURRAY,

FOR so invariably do we find him denominated by that style in all historical authorities, as well-printed as manuscript, that it might create confusion were we to adopt here a modern affectation of strict correctness, and call him Earl of Moray, according to the usage of his noble successors of later years, founded on the latinized title, "*Comes Moraviæ*," in the document by which his Earldom was conferred.

He was one of the several illegitimate children of King James the fifth of Scotland, and his mother was Margaret, daughter of John Erskine, fifth Earl of Mar, and afterwards wife of Sir Robert Douglas of Lochleven. He was born in the year 1533, and intended, after the usual royal fashion of Scotland in providing for such issue, for the ecclesiastical profession. The rich Priory of St. Andrews, and several other benefices, were accordingly conferred on him while in his cradle, and he was afterwards appointed Prior of Maçon, in France. In 1548 he accompanied the infant Mary, who was nine years younger than himself, to the court of Paris, where he presently imbibed all the refinements which distinguished it; became enamoured of political and military science, and cultivated so assiduously and so generally the fine talents which nature had bestowed on him, that he became versed in a variety of knowledge far beyond the scope of the best education of that time. To all these qualifications, acquired too in a court never remarkable for the purity of its manners, he is said to have joined a reverence towards religion, and a strict decency of moral conduct, always rare in persons of his age and rank

JAMES STUART,

He remained several years in France, for it should seem from circumstances that he returned not till 1556, a period rendered peculiarly interesting by the discord of parties, civil and religious, and by the jealousy entertained of the French interest in Scotland, which was cherished and represented by the Queen Dowager, Mary of Guise, who wielded the regency. He stood aloof for a long time, seemingly to consider and digest in his mind the posture of affairs before he engaged in them. He was however at length nominated by the Parliament one of the eight commissioners deputed to negotiate the treaty of marriage between Mary and the Dauphin, and to represent the Scottish nation at the celebration of the nuptials, which occurred on the fourteenth of April, 1558. In the meantime he adhered to, or at least left unopposed, the measures of the Queen Regent, with a gradually increasing bias however to the cause of the reformers, who had now become a formidable party in the state, and who had been driven into insurrection by some late instances of persecution. The Regent levied an army to chastise them, but was prevailed on to negotiate, and appointed the Lord James, as he was then called, together with the Earl of Argyll, her commissioners for that purpose. A treaty was concluded, every article of which was broken by her as soon as the insurgents had disbanded, and Murray resented her abandonment of faith by promptly and openly joining the "Lords of the Congregation," a denomination by which the chiefs of the Protestants had thought fit to distinguish themselves. His talents, his virtues, and his courage, presently placed him at their head, and rendered him the idol of the whole party. The Regent became alarmed at the formidable attitude in which he was thus suddenly placed, and, having vainly endeavoured by splendid offers to detach him from his associates, strove, with no better success, to insinuate to them that he secretly entertained a design to usurp the Throne. The reformers now again took up arms, and he appeared among them with a distinct military command, but the death of the Regent,

EARL OF MURRAY.

in the summer of 1560, saved Scotland for the time from the horrors of a civil war. A few days before it occurred she solicited an interview with him; confessed to him the errors of her government; and took leave of him in cordial reconciliation.

His half sister, Mary, the regnant Queen of Scotland, and Queen Consort in France, became a widow towards the conclusion of the same year, and a Convention of Estates appointed him to wait on her with their solicitations for her return to her Kingdom, from which she had now been absent for twelve years. In this visit he laid the ground of a system, if not of favour, at least of forbearance with respect to the reformers, and after her arrival, obtained through his influence over them, though with some difficulty, an engagement for the unmolested worship of God in her family according to the ancient faith. He now held, as might have been expected, the first place in her favour, and presently became an object of envy. The Duke of Chatelherault, first Prince of the blood, and with him the whole House of Hamilton, and the Earl of Huntly, one of the most powerful among the leaders of the catholic party, became, from different motives, his enemies. The intemperance of the latter plunged him into open rebellion, and he fell in the field, in the sight of Murray, who had opposed himself to him, at the head of a small body of troops, his skill and bravery in the command of which gave an ample earnest to his country of the extent of his military talents.

Murray might now be said to govern the kingdom. The most perfect cordiality subsisted between the Queen and himself, and their agreement was beheld by all except the parties just mentioned, without fear or jealousy. She seemed to submit herself wholly to his advice, and the peace of Scotland, for nearly three years, suffered no interruption but from the occasional turbulence of the reformers, when the appearance of Darnley in the character of a suitor for Mary's hand suddenly clouded the prospect in all its parts. - It was with Murray's consent that the Earl of Lennox

and his son had been invited into Scotland, nor does it appear that he had in the beginning expressed any disapprobation of Mary's extravagant partiality towards Darnley, but he discovered soon after their arrival that they had secretly connected themselves with his enemies, and even that Darnley, in the folly of youth, had complained without reserve of the great extent of the Queen's favour towards him. He observed too that her regard for himself was declining, and an altered conduct towards him in the sycophants of the Court convinced him that he was not mistaken. Too haughty to make remonstrances of doubtful success, and too generous to avail himself of the means of vengeance with which his popularity had armed him, he retired silently from the Court. Mary, with all the winning persuasion which she eminently possessed, recalled him, and he obeyed the summons. She spared no efforts to pacify and to conciliate him, but she concluded by requesting him to sign a written approbation of her marriage with Darnley, which he stedfastly refused. From that hour an enmity, the more deadly for having succeeded to a friendship which had borne all the marks of sincerity, took place between them. Mary, if she did not encourage, took no pains to check, the fury of Darnley, which extended even to a methodized plan of assassination, while Murray concerted measures with a party, in which were some of his own bitter enemies, for seizing the person of that favoured youth, and conveying him a prisoner into England, which Mary prevented by a timely flight with him to a place of undoubted security.

Our Elizabeth, bred in a gloomy jealousy of Scotland, to which was added a positive hatred to the person of Mary, though perhaps not minutely apprised of the detail of this design, had spared no pains in fomenting the spirit in which it was conceived. Murray, blinded by his resentment, had condescended to listen to her secret overtures, and to engage himself unwarily in her measures against his country, while Mary sealed his determination by commencing against him a positive persecution. Three

days only after her marriage with Darnley, she issued a peremptory command, which she knew he durst not obey, for his immediate appearance at her court, and on his failure declared him an outlaw. At the same time she received into her favour, and even strict confidence, three powerful nobles, who were distinguished as his most implacable enemies, and levied troops with all expedition, to force him and his adherents from those strong holds in the Highlands where they had taken refuge, surrounded by their vassals, and anxiously waiting for aid from their new patroness, Elizabeth. That princess, it is true, now publicly interfered for them, especially for Murray, but in a mode purposely contrived to widen the breach. She remonstrated with Mary on the injustice of her conduct towards him, and justified the acts on his part by which it had been provoked. Encouraged by the countenance of so powerful an intercessor, and by the acquisition of a small sum which she had caused to be remitted to them, Murray and his adherents now appeared in arms. Mary, in person, marched at the head of her troops to meet them, and drove them before her from Dumfries to the borders, from whence Murray, and a very few of his principal companions, precipitately fled into England, to claim the protection which Elizabeth had given them so many reasons to expect at her hands. They long remained totally neglected by her, and at length Murray and another obtained with much difficulty an audience, on condition that they should deny, in the presence of the French and Spanish ambassadors, that Elizabeth had encouraged them to take up arms. They had no sooner made this declaration, than she addressed to them the most bitter reproaches, charged them with rebellion against their lawful Prince; and, in a furious tone, commanded them as traitors to quit her presence. She permitted them however to remain in England, to the northernmost part of which they immediately retired.

While this incredible piece of treachery was acting in London, Mary called a meeting of Parliament to proceed vigorously

JAMES STUART,

against the fugitives. Strong remonstrances however, in favour of Murray, particularly from those who had been the leaders of the "congregation," induced her to pause. Elizabeth also again thought fit to add her instances, and Murray himself is improbably said to have been so far induced to forget his own dignity as to solicit and obtain the good offices of David Rizzio. At this precise period however Mary secretly joined the fearful conspiracy of France and Spain for the extermination of the protestants in all their dominions, and Murray was too illustrious a victim to be spared. She again determined therefore to prosecute him with the utmost expedition and severity, when the strange event of the assassination of Rizzio, and its consequences, once more averted the execution of her vengeance, but excited considerations which suddenly rendered her immediate reconciliation with Murray prudent, if not necessary. The conspirators, Morton, Ruthven, and the rest, his old friends and partisans, had regularly apprised him, in his neighbouring exile, of the progress of their frightful enterprise, and of its success, and he arrived in Edinburgh on the evening following the murder, to join them in the desperate project which they had formed for extorting a pardon from the Queen. The great advantage which she might derive from the division of this powerful party instantly occurred to her, and she lost no time in attempting it. She received Murray, with those who had fled, and now returned, with him, in the most gracious manner, promised them an utter oblivion of their offences, and even a renewal of her favour, and Murray, with his friends, consented to abandon the assassins of Rizzio, who fled with precipitation into the foreign asylum which the others had so lately quitted. These matters occurred in the month of March, 1565-6.

A year succeeded, crowded with most extraordinary events, the relation of which belongs to the general history of Scotland, in which the name of Murray scarcely once occurs during that period. Among a few conditions on which his late reconciliation

with Mary had been founded was a solemn pledge given on his part to abstain from all acts of enmity against the Earl of Bothwell, between whom and himself a bitter discord had long subsisted, and this may in some measure account for his inaction in any of the dismal scenes which had their origin in the iniquitous ambition of that nobleman, and the scarcely less criminal weakness of the Queen. It has been even said, but improbably, that he recommended her to marry Bothwell. About the middle of the year he obtained permission to travel, and took up his residence in France, where he remained while a mighty combination of Nobles was forming for the deposition of Mary, and carrying it's views into effect. That they were advised and animated by him from his retreat there can be little doubt, though history affords no clear proof of that fact. The infant James was now placed on the Throne; Murray returned; and, with an affected reluctance, accepted the office of Regent on the twenty-third of August, 1567.

His very entrance on this high trust evinced a clearness of judgement, a consistency of action, and, if the expression may be allowed, a political morality, of neither which the Scots of that day had seen any examples in their former governors. Before however his administration could assume a fixed character new distractions arose. Mary escaped from her confinement at Lochleven, and raised an army. Dismay and irresolution seized his adherents. They pressed him to negotiate or to retreat, but he remained unmoved, and, having disposed his inferior force to the best advantage, waited the attack which he knew he might expect from the Queen's impetuosity. The decisive battle of Langside followed, and the vanquished Mary fled into England, never to return. The Regent used his victory with mercy and moderation. Few had perished in the field, and none subsequently fell by the hands of the executioner. He was returning to the civil duties of his office when a new and unexpected call again withdrew him from them. Mary, who it is needless to say was now a prisoner

JAMES STUART,

against the fugitives. Strong remonstrances however, in favour of Murray, particularly from those who had been the leaders of the "congregation," induced her to pause. Elizabeth also again thought fit to add her instances, and Murray himself is improbably said to have been so far induced to forget his own dignity as to solicit and obtain the good offices of David Rizzio. At this precise period however Mary secretly joined the fearful conspiracy of France and Spain for the extermination of the protestants in all their dominions, and Murray was too illustrious a victim to be spared. She again determined therefore to prosecute him with the utmost expedition and severity, when the strange event of the assassination of Rizzio, and its consequences, once more averted the execution of her vengeance, but excited considerations which suddenly rendered her immediate reconciliation with Murray prudent, if not necessary. The conspirators, Morton, Ruthven, and the rest, his old friends and partisans, had regularly apprised him, in his neighbouring exile, of the progress of their frightful enterprise, and of its success, and he arrived in Edinburgh on the evening following the murder, to join them in the desperate project which they had formed for extorting a pardon from the Queen. The great advantage which she might derive from the division of this powerful party instantly occurred to her, and she lost no time in attempting it. She received Murray, with those who had fled, and now returned, with him, in the most gracious manner, promised them an utter oblivion of their offences, and even a renewal of her favour, and Murray, with his friends, consented to abandon the assassins of Rizzio, who fled with precipitation into the foreign asylum which the others had so lately quitted. These matters occurred in the month of March, 1565-6

A year succeeded, crowded with most extraordinary events, the relation of which belongs to the general history of Scotland, in which the name of Murray scarcely once occurs during that period. Among a few conditions on which his late reconciliation

with Mary had been founded was a solemn pledge given on his part to abstain from all acts of enmity against the Earl of Bothwell, between whom and himself a bitter discord had long subsisted, and this may in some measure account for his inaction in any of the dismal scenes which had their origin in the iniquitous ambition of that nobleman, and the scarcely less criminal weakness of the Queen. It has been even said, but improbably, that he recommended her to marry Bothwell. About the middle of the year he obtained permission to travel, and took up his residence in France, where he remained while a mighty combination of Nobles was forming for the deposition of Mary, and carrying it's views into effect. That they were advised and animated by him from his retreat there can be little doubt, though history affords no clear proof of that fact. The infant James was now placed on the Throne; Murray returned; and, with an affected reluctance, accepted the office of Regent on the twenty-third of August, 1567.

His very entrance on this high trust evinced a clearness of judgement, a consistency of action, and, if the expression may be allowed, a political morality, of neither which the Scots of that day had seen any examples in their former governors. Before however his administration could assume a fixed character new distractions arose. Mary escaped from her confinement at Lochleven, and raised an army. Dismay and irresolution seized his adherents. They pressed him to negotiate or to retreat, but he remained unmoved, and, having disposed his inferior force to the best advantage, waited the attack which he knew he might expect from the Queen's impetuosity. The decisive battle of Langside followed, and the vanquished Mary fled into England, never to return. The Regent used his victory with mercy and moderation. Few had perished in the field, and none subsequently fell by the hands of the executioner. He was returning to the civil duties of his office when a new and unexpected call again withdrew him from them. Mary, who it is needless to say was now a prisoner

JAMES STUART, EARL OF MURRAY.

in the hands of Elizabeth, resolved to submit her cause to the judgement of that Princess, who readily accepted the jurisdiction, and required the Regent to defend his conduct towards his Sovereign. Commissioners for the discussion were appointed on each side, and the celebrated conferences at York and Westminster ensued, the detail of which is so well known to historical readers that it would be idle were it possible to repeat any part of it in this necessarily superficial sketch. Suffice it therefore to say that the sound sense of Murray was baffled on every point by the deep artifice of Elizabeth and her ministers, and that even on the single question to which he had previously resolved never to give an explicit answer, namely, whether the Queen of Scots had been a party in the murder of her husband, he was at length drawn in to make a clear and definitive declaration.

Little more can be said of this eminent person. The short remainder of his life presents nothing to our view beyond the ordinary measures of good domestic government, which adorned the brief term of his administration, and procured for him the appellation of "the good Regent," by which he was long distinguished in Scotland. He perished by the hand of an assassin, of a junior line of that illustrious family with which he had been always at bitter variance; not in pursuance of that feud, nor for any public cause, but to avenge an injury purely private and personal. In riding through the high street of the town of Linlithgow, on the twenty-third of January, 1570, he was shot through the body by James Hamilton, of Bothwellhaugh, and died within a few hours after.

The Earl of Murray married, in February, 1561, Anne, eldest daughter of William Keith, fourth Earl Marischal, and afterwards wife to Colin Campbell, sixth Earl of Argyll. He had by her two daughters; Elizabeth, married to James Stewart, son of the Lord Doun; and Margaret, to Francis Hay, ninth Earl of Errol.



• JOHN KNOX

OB 1572

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLECTION AT

HOLYROOD PALACE, EDINBURGH

JOHN KNOX.

THE life of an ecclesiastical reformer, a title always bestowed on those whose endeavours to overthrow a religious establishment have been crowned by success, requires many episodes to render it interesting to any others than those of his own profession. The journeyings, and preachings, and mortifications, and weepings, and raptures of such a person, nay, his very prophecies, unless some one of them should chance to be verified, which, for the best of all reasons, scarcely ever happens, can never attract general attention. To bespeak our regard he must have raised armies by the magic of his eloquence, hurled Kings from their thrones, annihilated civil systems, burned multitudes of persons, or must at least himself have been burned. Knox had none of these recommendations. He was a busy instrument in the propagation of a schism which would have worked its way, perhaps not quite so speedily, if he had never had existence. He was deputed to undermine by coarse and vulgar declamation a monarchy the honour of pulling down which his employers intended to reserve to themselves. His brutal insolence to the Sovereigns under whom he lived never exalted itself to active rebellion, he suffered no punishment which could be deemed persecution, nor did his station afford him the power of persecuting others. His secret transactions and engagements with the eminent persons whom he joined in disturbing the peace of their country have never been discovered, and his history is almost wholly confined to the ravings of fanaticism and sedition.

Who were his parents is unknown, yet the fact of his having been descended from the ancient and respectable family of Knox of Renfaileigh, in the shire of Renfrew, is supported by such

JOHN KNOX.

strong presumptions that it cannot be doubted. He was born in 1505, at a village called Giffard, in East Lothian, and having received his first instructions for the clerical profession at the grammar-school of the neighbouring town of Haddington, was removed to the University of St Andrews, where he studied under the tuition of John Mair, an eminent teacher of the theology then in vogue, with such application and activity that he is said to have obtained the degree of Master of Arts while yet a youth, and to have been admitted into priest's orders before the age prescribed by ecclesiastical law. The subtleties however of school divinity were ill suited to the bold and inquisitive character of his mind, and he soon abandoned them for the study of the primitive fathers, in which he passed several years of severe application. At length the doctrines of the reformation reached Scotland, he attached himself to a priest of the name of Williams, provincial of the Scottish Benedictines, who had not only translated the New Testament, but had publicly decried in his sermons the Pope's authority, and soon after, in 1544, renounced in form the Roman Catholic faith, and became the regular disciple of the famous George Wishart. He attended that more moderate pastor in his spiritual progresses till the commencement of the year 1546, when Wishart was put to death, and celebrated his memory in the usual strain which such writers apply to such subjects.

From his connexion with Wishart he derived considerable fame among the reformers, who began to consider and treat him as the head of their infant church. The Lairds of Ormeston and Langniddry, powerful men, who were then the chief temporal patrons of the new persuasion, appointed him tutor to their children, and he lived in their houses. Processes were at length issued against him, and he had resolved to fly to Germany, but those gentlemen persuaded him to take refuge in St. Andrews, where the castle was then held by the persons who had lately assassinated in it Cardinal Beaton, its owner. Knox, who had

called that murder "a godly thing," which he repeats in his history, was received by them with joy. He expounded and catechised so hopefully that they declared "the gift of God to be in him," and called on him with one voice to assume the office of a public preacher, which, after long persuasion, he accepted, and presently after signalled himself by a sermon so furious that the new Primate instantly took measures to silence him. These however were prevented by the party in the castle, which in fact ruled the town, and the Catholics could do little beyond summoning Knox to a public disputation, to which he gladly agreed, and in which, as might be expected, we are told that he was completely successful. The whole city now embraced his doctrines, the church relinquished an opposition which in that place was utterly fruitless, and he remained there, with the merit at least of indefatigable application to his object, till July, 1547, when the castle was reduced by a French force, and he was put on board one of the galleys which brought it over, in which he remained on the coast of France a prisoner for two years.

In 1549 he was liberated, and came to London, where he obtained a licence to preach at Berwick, and soon after at Newcastle on Tyne, and repaired for that purpose into the north. During his residence there he received the appointment of a chaplain in ordinary to Edward the sixth, as well as some rebukes for the extravagance of certain of his tenets, and returned to London in the spring of 1553, where he refused to accept a living which the Privy Council had moved Archbishop Cranmer to bestow on him, and vilified the King's ministers in his sermons, under the names of Achitophel, Judas, &c. To have prosecuted him specifically for that insolence might have been then very injurious to the progress of the reformation; they endeavoured therefore to curb him by another method: he was cited before the Council to assign his reasons for refusing the benefice, with the view, probably, of provoking him into unlawful invectives against the new establishment in England. His answers, though

JOHN KNOX.

sufficiently proving his dissatisfaction with that system, were uttered with such caution that no safe ground could be taken whereon to institute any further proceeding against him, but he was dismissed with an admonition which, however gently delivered, determined him to exercise his vocation in the country, and he was preaching in the towns and villages of Buckinghamshire, to large congregations, probably attracted by the novelty of a dialect which must have been unintelligible to them, when the accession of Mary rendered it prudent for him to quit the kingdom. He embarked for Dieppe in February, 1554, N. S. and travelled from thence to Geneva, where he placed himself in the presence, and under the orders, of his great spiritual principal, John Calvin.

Calvin presently deputed him to Frankfort, to minister to the English protestants who had fled from the violence of Mary, and settled in great numbers in that city, but his doctrines were even more offensive to these good people than those of the Church of Rome. Unwilling to engage in endless controversy with him, and unable to prevail on him to use the English Liturgy, they took a short method to disencumber themselves of him, accusing him of treason to the magistrates of the city, both against their sovereign, the Emperor, and against Queen Mary; upon which the magistrates, aware that they could not avoid surrendering him to either of these Potentates who might demand his person, secretly apprised him of his danger, and he returned precipitately to Geneva, where he remained from March, 1555, till the following August, when he determined to visit again his native land. His transactions there, during the abode of a year, present little beyond the usual contents of the journal of any other itinerant preacher. It is true that the Scottish secession from Popery had assumed, during his long absence, the character of an important political implement, and his consequence had necessarily increased. The nobility of the Kirk, as it now began to be called, were the regular opponents of the Court and government of the

Queen Regent, Knox was too promising an agent to be neglected; and they courted his intimacy. They easily prevailed on him to affront that lady by addressing to her a letter, abusing the faith in which she had lived, and exhorting her to hear his sermons; and Mary, with great justice, called it a pasquinade. The Prelates at length cited him to answer for his conduct, and he obeyed by reparing to Edinburgh on the appointed day, and preaching there to the largest congregation that he had ever drawn together. No further steps however were taken against him while he remained in Scotland, yet in July, 1556, he once more returned to Geneva, and had no sooner disappeared than the Bishops again cited him, and, on his non-appearance, condemned him to death for heresy, and his effigy was burned in Edinburgh. In all this there was much of the air of a compromise

In the summer of the following year the discontented Lords, conceiving that they had now gained sufficient strength to protect him against the government, pressed him to return to Scotland, and Calvin told him that to refuse would be "rebellion against God, and cruelty to his country;" so he set out on his journey, but when he had reached Dieppe, and was about to embark, he received letters, informing him that some leading persons in the party had begun to waver, and recommending it to him to halt for a time on the continent. Knox appears to have been excited to great wrath by these intimations. He was prudent enough to take the advice of his friends, and returned to Geneva, doubtful of their sincerity, or their power, or both, but he answered the letters with denunciations of vengeance, uttered in a style of papal authority, against inconstancy in any of his disciples. He was sufficiently employed however in the good cause at Geneva, for he now wrote, and printed there, his invective against the sovereignty of females, with the awful title of "The first Blast of the Trumpet against the monstrous Regimen of Women," the most remarkable of his works, aimed at once against his own Queen, and our Mary. He was preparing a second Blast, when

the last named Princess died, and the accession of Elizabeth; whose aversion to popery was well known, induced him to lay it aside. In contemplation of obtaining her furtherance he now determined to visit England, and wrote to Cecil for a licence to that end, which was peremptorily and scornfully refused. Knox discovered that his book had induced this repulse, and forced the Secretary into a correspondence on its merits, in which, however disgusting the insolence, and obstinacy, and mad fanaticism of the man, we cannot but admire his sincerity and courage.

To give one short extract from this most singular letter. "If any think me," says he, "either enemy to the person, or yet to the regimen, of her whom God hath now promoted, they are utterly deceived of me, for the miraculous work of God, comforting his afflicted by an infirm vessel, I do acknowledge, and the power of his most potent hand (raising up whom best pleaseth his mercy to suppress such as fight against his glory) I will obey, albeit that both nature, and God's most perfect ordinance, repugn to such regimen. More plainly to speak, if Queen Elizabeth shall confess that the extraordinary dispensation of God's great mercy maketh that lawful unto her which both nature and God's law doth deny unto all women, then shall none in England be more willing to maintain her lawful authority than I shall be, but if, God's wondrous work set aside, she ground, as God forbid, the justness of her title upon consuetude, laws, or ordinances of men, then I am assured that as such foolish presumption doth highly offend God's supreme Majesty, so do I greatly fear that her ingratitude shall not long want punishment." Not content with writing thus to Cecil, he addressed a letter to Elizabeth herself, in which we find the following menacing passage. "If thus in God's presence you humble yourself, as in my heart I glorify God for that rest granted to his afflicted flock within England under you, a weak instrument, so will I with tongue and pen justify your authority and regimen, as the Holy Ghost hath justified the same in Deborah, that blessed mother in Israel :

But, if the premises, as God forbid, neglected, you shall begin to brag of your birth, and to build your authority and regimen upon your own law, flatter you who so list, your felicity shall be short." Need it be asked whether this was the effect of inspiration or insanity?

Too much however in his senses to trust himself in Elizabeth's hands, and hopeless of converting her to puritanism, he now set out for Scotland, and arrived there in May, 1559. He was soon after nominated by the Lords of the Congregation, as they had for some time styled themselves, together with another preacher, to endeavour to obtain by negotiation that Princess's aid to the temporal views of the Kirk, which, as is well known, she most readily granted. The subversion of the ancient religion was now consummated. Knox composed a code of constitutions for the newly invented church, at great length, and digested with a clearness and precision of which, in spite of his ferocious wildness, he was very capable. One of the nine general heads which it comprised was intitled "Touching the suppression of Idolatry," and contained this sweeping clause "Idolatry, with all monuments and places of the same, as abbeyes, chapels, monkeries, frieries, nunneries, chantries, cathedral churches, canones, colleges, other than presently are parish churches or schools, to be utterly suppressed in all places of this realm, palaces, mansions, and dwelling houses, with their orchards and gardens, only excepted." The Estates, even before they had ratified these constitutions, became so enamoured of that peculiar article, that they passed an act specially for the execution of its provisions, and Knox aided their pious intention by simultaneously proclaiming in a sermon that "the sure way to banish the rooks was to pull down their nests." Instantly commenced that barbarous havoc, the disgrace of which to the land is still attested by so many magnificent relics. "Thereupon ensued," pathetically writes Archbishop Spotswood, who was no enemy to the prime author of the mischief, "a pitiful vastation of churches and

JOHN KNOX

church buildings throughout all the parts of the realm, for every one made bold to put too their hands, the meaner sort imitating the ensample of the greater, and those who were in authority. No difference was made, but all the churches either defaced, or pulled to the ground. The holy vessels, and whatsoever else men could make gain of, such as timber, lead, and bells, were put to sale. The very sepulchres of the dead were not spared. The registers of the church, and bibliothèques, cast into the fire. In a word, all was ruined."

The ecclesiastical government was now committed to twelve persons, the kingdom divided into as many districts, to be placed under their care respectively, and that of Edinburgh was assigned to Knox. There the celebrated Mary found him, intoxicated by power and popularity, on her arrival from France to take possession of a crown of thorns, the first of which he planted. The private exercise in the chapel of her palace of the faith in which she had been born and bred was intolerable to him, and, in defiance of an act of the State by which the penalty of death was denounced against any one who should disturb such worship, he inveighed furiously against it in his pulpit on the very first Sunday after her coming, declaring that "one mass was more frightful to him than ten thousand armed enemies landed in any part of the realm." Mary, forced to temporize, attempted to move him in the courteousness of private conference, but he was inexorable. The only concessions, if they might be so called, which she could obtain from him, regarded his book lately mentioned. He declared that he had written it solely "against that wicked Jezabel of England," and told her that as St. Paul could live under the government of Nero, so could he under her's. "She promised him access to her," says the most popular of the Scottish historians, quoting, in this instance, Knox's own authority, "whenever he demanded it and she even desired him, if he found her blameable in any thing, to reprehend her freely in private, rather than vilify her in the pulpit before all the people,

but he plainly told her that he had a public ministry entrusted to him; that if she would come to church she should hear the gospel of truth, and that it was not his business to apply to every individual, nor had he leisure for such occupation." "This rustic apostle," adds the same writer, "scruples not in his history to inform us that he once treated her with such severity that she lost all command of her temper, and dissolved into tears before him. Yet, so far from being moved with youth, and beauty, and royal dignity, reduced to that condition, he persevered in his insolent reproofs, and when he relates this incident, he even discovers a visible pride and satisfaction in his own conduct." Innumerable instances of this savage insolence towards the fair Queen might be cited from Knox's own relation.

This singular person survived the date of the complete establishment of his church for ten years, a portion of his life which affords not a single circumstance worthy to be recorded. With some shew of reason indeed have his disciples asserted that Providence raised him up specially to perform that work, for certainly he was qualified for no other, and sunk, therefore, after he had accomplished it, into comparative insignificance. He died, after a gradual decay of three months, on the twenty-fourth of November, 1572, and was buried in the church-yard of the parish of St. Giles, in Edinburgh. Knox, amidst his pious cares, seems to have been by no means inattentive to his private interests: there is reason to believe that he died even wealthy. Certain it is that he was twice very respectably married, first, to Margery Bowes, of the ancient family of that name in the county of Durham, secondly, to Margaret, daughter of Andrew Stuart, Lord Ochiltree. By his first wife he had two sons, Nathaniel and Eleazar, who were educated in St. John's college, in the university of Cambridge, became Fellows of that house, and beneficed clergymen in England; and one daughter, married to Robert Pont, a Lord of Session. By the second, he had three daughters, two of whom became the wives of ministers of the Kirk, of the names of Welsh and Fleming.

JOHN KNOX.

Knox's writings, all, as might be expected, of the polemical class, were numerous. His "History of the Reformation within the realm of Scotland," a book on many accounts of considerable curiosity, is well known, for the rest, it is painful to enumerate works which no one in this time has read, or will read, and yet some mention of them may be expected here. The following are extant in print. "A faithful Admonition to the true Professors of the Gospel of Christ within the Kingdom of England," 1554 "A Letter to Mary, Queen Regent of Scotland," 1556 "The Appellation of John Knox from the cruel and unjust Sentence pronounced against him by the false Bishops and Clergy of Scotland, with a Supplication and Exhortation to the Nobility, Estates and Commonalty of the same realm," 1558 "The First Blast," &c already spoken of, 1558 "A Brief Exhortation to England for the speedy embracing of Christ's Gospel heretofore by the Tyranny of Mary suppressed and banished," 1559 "An Answer to a great number of blasphemous Cavillations written by an Anabaptist, and Adversary of God's eternal Predestination," 1560 "A Reply to the Abbot of Crossragwell's" (Crossregal) "Faith, or Catechism, with his Conference with that Abbot," 1562 "A Sermon preached before the King," (Henry Darnley) 1566 "An Answer to a Letter written by James Tyria, a Jesuit," 1568. Other of his pieces are printed in Calderwood's History of the Church of Scotland, and several of his manuscripts existed about eighty years since in the hands of a Mr. Robert Woodrow, a Minister of the Kirk



PLATE VIII

THOMAS HOWARD, DUKE OF NORFOLK

OB. 1572

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLECTION OF

HIS GRACE THE DUKE OF NORFOLK

THOMAS HOWARD,

FOURTH DUKE OF NORFOLK.

HENRY, Earl of Surrey, the poet, the soldier, and the last victim to the monstrous cruelty and injustice of Henry the eighth, and Frances, third daughter of John de Vere, fifteenth Earl of Oxford, were the parents of this great nobleman. The sanguinary death of his father made way for his succession to the Dukedom in 1557, on the demise of his grandfather, Thomas, the third Duke, whose family had been restored in blood in the first year of Queen Mary. The precise date of his birth is unknown, but he was at that time twenty-one years old. He had received his early education in the protestant faith, in the family of his aunt, the Duchess of Richmond, who was a zealous reformer, and probably afterwards studied in the university of Oxford, since we find that he took there the degree of Master of Arts on the nineteenth of April, 1568.

He had espoused Elizabeth's title to the Crown with all the ardour of youth, and all the sincerity of inexperience, and was among the earliest objects of her gratitude when she succeeded to it. She invested him with the Order of the Garter, and in the following year appointed him her Lieutenant in the North, and Commander in chief of her forces there. In those characters, he concluded a treaty, as soon as he arrived at Berwick, with the Lords who, for the protection of the Duke of Chatelherault, next heir to the Crown, were opposed to the French interest in Scotland, but the peace of Edinburgh, which speedily followed, prevented him from any opportunity of singalizing himself in the

field. In 1567, Charles the ninth of France, having complimented Elizabeth with authority to invest two of her subjects with his then much valued order of St. Michael, she named Norfolk to share that distinction. In the next year he was one of the three Commissioners appointed to examine at York the charges brought by the Regent Murray against the captive Queen of Scots, and here he first seriously entertained the idea of that unfortunate matrimonial scheme which at length proved so fatal to him.

The first overture of this project had been made to him two years before by Maitland of Lethington, Mary's Secretary of State, shortly before her marriage to Darnley, when the Duke "waved it," as we are told, "with a modest refusal." Murray, with motives very different, now secretly reiterated the proposal, but it was perhaps yet more discouraged than before by Norfolk, who objected, with some degree of disdain, to an offer of marriage with a woman who laboured under a suspicion, indeed a formal accusation, of dreadful crimes, although that woman were a Sovereign. The correspondence however with Murray, though the subject perhaps was at present unknown, did not escape the vigilance of Elizabeth's spies, who discovered also that the Duke sometimes communicated with Lethington, and others in confidence with the Queen of Scots. In the exercise too of his office of Commissioner signs of partiality to her cause were occasionally observed. Elizabeth's jealousy was awakened, and she exclaimed, in the hearing of several of her Court, that "the Queen of Scots would never want a friend so long as Norfolk lived."

Early in the succeeding year, 1569, we find the Duke wavering on the proposal of the match. He had consulted some of his friends; had been encouraged by them to adopt the project; and a small party was secretly in some measure formed to forward its views. To the scheme for the Duke's marriage was now added

FOURTH DUKE OF NORFOLK.

another, for that of his only daughter to the young King of Scotland, Mary's son. Elizabeth, who became imperfectly apprised of these transactions, had now just ground for anger, though she had none to suspect the Duke's loyalty. Even in the midst of their progress he had ingenuously laid before her certain splendid offers by which the King of Spain had sought to corrupt his fidelity, and to induce him to employ his great power and popularity in embarrassing her government. But the mere failure of that profound deference to loyalty which in those days rendered it necessary for a nobleman to obtain to his marriage the previous approbation of his Prince, not to mention the peculiar circumstances of the bride proposed in this case, could not but have given high offence to a Sovereign less irritable and tenacious than Elizabeth. She dissembled however her resentment till she could fathom the whole of the plan to the utmost, and the means that she used for that purpose, though not absolutely proved, are indicated by such powerful historical probabilities as to dispel all reasonable doubt. The Earl of Leicester, who unworthily possessed the Duke's confidence, was employed by her to abuse it. The darkness which involved the motives of that subtle and unprincipled man, even in his own day, has in the lapse of time become generally impenetrable, but it is scarcely possible to surmise with any degree of plausibility what other end he, who never moved but with the view of serving his own interest, chiefly by cultivating her favour, could have proposed by his conduct in this affair. The concurrent testimony of all historians of that time has assured us that Leicester, at this very period, came suddenly forward to urge the Duke with vehemence to conclude the treaty for the match, and undertook himself an active and busy agency in the promotion of it, that, when it was on the point of being accomplished, he affected to fall sick, and, on receiving a visit from her, discovered the whole to the Queen; and that he so devoted his friend to almost certain ruin, under

THOMAS HOWARD,

the pretence of endeavouring to save himself from possible displeasure.

Elizabeth however entertained a partiality of some sort towards Norfolk, and wished to save him. She still received him with apparent complacency, and even warned him by hints of his danger. Dining with her at Farnham, she "advised him pleasantly to be careful on what pillow he laid his head." She informed him soon after that all had been imparted to her, and reproached him with severity. He now besought his friends to mediate for him, and retired to his estates in Norfolk, but soon returned to the Court, where on his arrival he learned that the Queen had in the mean time received a letter from Murray, with new disclosures. He was summoned to appear before the Privy Council, and, having made a large confession, the effusion, not of fear, but of a mind not less honourable than lofty, was committed to the Tower on the eleventh of October, 1569, on a charge of high misdemeanors, from whence, after a year's imprisonment, he was removed to a milder restraint in his own house, under the care of Sir Henry Neville. Here he was visited by that honest minister Bughley, who loved him not less than he loved honour and impartiality, and who, says Camden, "did all he could to work him over to marry any other woman, whereby he would afterwards be free from suspicion, and the state be out of fear: notwithstanding," continues the same author, "there were some who thought he was now set at liberty on purpose that he might be brought into some greater danger. This is certain, that more things came to light afterwards than he was aware of, and the fidelity of those who were his greatest confidants, either by hope or bribery, began to fail him."

The fatal design had indeed sunk too deeply into Norfolk's mind to be eradicated. He was no sooner free from all custody than he engaged in a regular correspondence with Mary, who suggested applications for assistance to the Pope, and the King of

FOURTH DUKE OF NORFOLK.

Spain, with other expedients full of danger to the state. In this enlargement of the plan it was even proposed to seize the person of Elizabeth, and to restore the Catholic religion in England, but this the Duke was proved to have rejected with horror and detestation. The agency of persons of mean rank, and of doubtful character, was now employed, and among them one of the name of Higford, the Duke's secretary, whom he was obliged to intrust with the decyphering of Mary's letters, and others, the originals of which he was strictly ordered to destroy. This however he disobeyed, and, in the summer of 1571, having been detected in the act of conveying a sum of money from the French Ambassador to Mary's party in Scotland, and cast into prison, in a mixture of fear and treachery voluntarily directed Elizabeth's government to the secret place in which he had deposited them. Norfolk was immediately arrested, on the seventh of September again committed to the Tower; and, on the sixteenth of the succeeding January, was tried by twenty-five Peers, George Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury, presiding as Lord High Steward, on a charge of high treason, obscurely stated in the indictment, and by no means proved by the papers produced against him, which were the sole evidence employed on the occasion: on that however he was found guilty, and was condemned, in the teeth of the well known statute of Edward the sixth, which enacts that no person shall be convicted of high treason but on the parole testimony of at least two witnesses, to be confronted with the accused.

When the usual final question was put to him "What he had to say why judgement of death should not be passed on him?" he answered only "God's will be done, who will judge between me and my false accusers." The sentence was then pronounced, which he heard with calmness, and when it was ended, said to the Lords, in a firm but modest tone, "Sentence is passed on me as a traitor. I have none to trust to but God and the Queen. I am

THOMAS HOWARD,

excluded from your society, but I hope shortly to enjoy the heavenly. I will fit myself to die: only this thing I crave that the Queen would be kind to my children and servants, and take care that my debts be paid." Camden, who was officially present at the trial, records these speeches, and has in his excellent "Annals of Elizabeth," a number of minute particulars connected with this nobleman's story, too extensive to be here inserted otherwise than in substance, given with a fidelity and impartiality unusual with the historical writers of his time; but he prudently leaves the inferences to be drawn by posterity. There can be no doubt that the Duke's ambition aimed at the future attainment of the station of King Consort, if the phrase may be allowed, of Scotland, and eventually of England; and it was a blameless ambition, for it involved no question of Elizabeth's right to reign, nor of any disturbance of the regular succession to the throne, but aimed merely at the chance of partaking in the splendor of a legal presumptive inheritance.

Elizabeth hesitated for several months whether to take the life of a nobleman perhaps not less beloved by herself than by her people, but at length gave way to those predominant feminine passions, fear and jealousy. An address, doubtless with her secret concurrence, was at length presented to her by a committee of both Houses of Parliament, beseeching her to sign the warrant for his execution, with which, affecting that she could not resist the voice of her people so declared, she complied, and on the second of June, 1572, the Duke suffered death on the scaffold, with that pious resignation, and dignified calmness, which bespoke at once the purity and the grandeur of his character.

Thomas, fourth Duke of Norfolk, was three married; first to Mary, daughter, and one of the coheirs, of Henry Fitzalan, fourteenth and last Earl of Arundel of his ancient name, who died in childbirth, on the twenty-fifth of August, 1557, under the age of

FOURTH DUKE OF NORFOLK.

seventeen, leaving however her infant son, Philip, who became Earl of Arundel in right of his mother. He married secondly, Margaret, daughter and sole heir of Thomas, Lord Audley of Walden, and Lord Chancellor, and widow of Henry, a younger son of John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, and by her had two sons, Thomas and William, the ancestors respectively of the present Earls of Suffolk and Carlisle, and two daughters, Elizabeth, who died an infant, and Margaret married to Richard Sackville, third Earl of Dorset of his name. The Duke's third Lady was Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Francis Leyburne, and widow of Thomas, fourth Lord Dacre of Gillesland;